



(金東成),

가

(安在鴻)

2

—

2001

『

/

』

9

9

』

가

가, 가, 가, , ,

가

87

가

가

100

1996

50

4

『 (語錄碑) 』

가

『

』

가 1998

가

50

2001

LG

가

가

2003 4



.....	2
• .....	9
• .....	44
• .....	64
• .....	100
• .....	119
• .....	163
• .....	202
• .....	250
• .....	288

• 3 · 1 (新大韓) .....	325
• (方略) .....	403
• .....	447
: / • .....	531
Vipan Chandra • Leadership and East Asian Modernity .....	567
.....	640



\*

(申福龍)

『가』

(金容德)

『近代交流史と相互認識』

(朴榮濬)

『』

(玄鳳學)

Israel Davidsohn  
6, 90 1951 10

(慎鏞慶)

『( )』

(李澤微)

『가』 ( ) ( )

(鄭晉錫)

『LG』

(沈在箕)

『1,2,3,5』

(金榮熙)

『』

(柳永益)

『( )』 ( )

(洪善杓)

Philip  
Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays

(白鶴淳)

『가』

(權五琦)

21 (PFA)

(朴枝香)

『』

Vipan Chandra

(1967) (1988)

가 1994 8 1995 8



---

361-1200  
2003 3 10  
2003 3 25  
( )

ISBN 89-88918-12-6 13070



| : |

1.

1980

(傳記)

(biographical politics)

(開化史)

가

1)

---

1) . . . ,<sup>7</sup> 『 : , 1986).

(Channing Liem)

2)가

『  
』<sup>3)</sup>  
(金道泰)

(李光麟) 4)

가

## 2. 가

(同福郡: 寶城郡) (文德面)  
가 (可川里) (恩  
津郡) (九子谷面) (華石里) , (産俗)

2) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn(Pennsylvania: Philip Jaisohn Memorial Foundation, Inc., The Elkin Park, n.d.); American Finest Gift to Korea: The Life of Philip Jaison(New York: The William-Frederick Press, 1952).

3) 『  
』( : , 1972).

4) 『  
』『東方學志』(18)( : , 1978), 3 ;  
『  
』 : 『  
』( :  
, 1990), 114 .

가

(徐光彦: ?~1884)<sup>5)</sup>

가

1,800 (5 ) 6)

5

(載春: 1859~1888), , (載昌:

1865~1884) (載雨: 1869~1905) 4 (延日人)

(鄭海殷) 가 .<sup>7)</sup>

5 (徐光夏) 8)

『  
(大邱徐氏世譜)』

가

(星州)

(李箕大)

가

4 가

가

.<sup>9)</sup>

5) 『  
』(1) 內編中(1), 123 光孝 234-55, 421  
光彦 .<sup>『</sup>

6) 『  
』(2)( : , 1988), 67 .  
』<sup>『</sup>

7) 『  
』(1840) 가 .  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

8) 『  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

9) 『  
』(1840) 가 .  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

10) 『  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

11) 『  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

12) 『  
』(12) 當宇朝 光緒 8 ( ) 3 22 : 「親臨春塘臺 中宮殿疹候  
平復慶科別試文科殿試榜丙科條」.

가 . 가  
가 가,  
가 ( 2 )  
가 .  
가 1866 ( )<sup>10)</sup>  
18 가 . 가  
(宗親府)  
18  
(徐昊錫)  
(1865) 1866  
1866<sup>11)</sup>  
가  
가 1863 ( )  
(榜文)  
(1863父光夏 生父光彦 本大丘 居京)<sup>12)</sup>  
가  
가 (科紙)  
가  
1864 1

가 .  
가 1863 11  
(1948) 1866  
? (戶山)  
15  
,<sup>13)</sup> 가 1883 (20 )가  
1863 가 , 가  
1866  
가  
(恩津)  
가 7 가  
“  
가 ” ( )  
가<sup>14)</sup>  
가 가  
『 』 가  
,<sup>15)</sup> 가

10) 『 』 47 .  
11) , 48 .  
12) 8) 『 』

13) 山崎正男(編), 『陸軍士官學校』(東京: 秋元書房, 1984), 9 .  
14) 『 』 49 .  
15) 『 』( : , 1970), 5-7 .





가 (月俸)

300 10 가<sup>20)</sup>

( ), 1884

가 가 2 가

가 가

가가<sup>21)</sup>

2 0 ) Yun Chi-Ho's Diary: 1897-1902, Vol. 5 (Seoul: National History Compilation Committee, 1975), August 8th, 1897.

2 1 ) 『 ( : , 1975), 1898 1 15 .

가

가 (黃玆)

(1894) (外臣)

(天道)<sup>22)</sup>

가 가

가 가 (自尊自大)

3. 가 가

가 가 (金玉均)

2 2 ) 『梅泉野錄』(6) 隆熙4年 庚戌(1910) 2 1 : 「徐載弼在美國 爲其妻所離異 妻美國人也 載弼甲午返國 謁上稱外臣 着眼鏡 含卷烟 負手而出 舉朝痛憤 至是 人以謂天道有知」.

(朴泳孝) · (洪英植) · (徐光範)

11 (寸叔)<sup>23)</sup>

가

(晝晝夜夜)

가

(一新)

(舊套)

(確覺)<sup>25)</sup>

가

가

(結黨)

가

가

가 1877<sup>26)</sup>

가

1879<sup>27)</sup>

1883 ,

가

가

<sup>28)</sup>

<sup>24)</sup>

(結盟) 30<sup>29)</sup>

12

(閔泰瑗)

1878(戊寅)

<sup>30)</sup>

가

가

6 ~ 7

가

가

(竹添進一郎)

“(3 )

”<sup>31)</sup>

( )가

25) , 『 (A Few Recollection of the 1898(sic) Revolution)(2), 『東亞日報』 1935 1 2 .

26) 李光麟, 『 (開化黨研究)』 ( : , 1973), 9 .

27) , 14-16 .

28) , 147 .

29) , 32 .

30) 閔泰瑗, 『 ( : 乙酉文化社, 1973), 61 .

31) 『 (甲申日錄)』 10 31 .

23) 『 』 135 .

24) 『 』 82-83 .

(奉元寺),

(鴨鷗亭)

(劉大致)가

32)

가

(焦急)

가

(要)

(代)

33)

가 가

(辛巳, 49年, 1881年) 12

(大院

君)

3

32) 『推案及鞠案』(30) 高宗(2): 「甲申大逆不道罪人喜貞等鞠案」(1978), 598, 「李允相」條; 九月 玉均·泳植·光範·載弼·往往作會 且或會於劉鴻基(大痴)家」.

33) 『(2)].

... 3

가

(好機到來)

(公使)가

(明治維新)

가

가

(逗留) 3

(羨望千萬)

(雄心)

가

(所事) , 5

(遺恨)

... 가

(步武)

(宗社之運)

34)

(福澤諭吉) 『

(治道論)

(1881.12, 1882.3, 1883.6)

2 (1881.12, 1882.3),

2

(1880.6, 1881.1),

1 (1881.12)

1 (1881.4)

35)

34) 『新民14』(新民社, 1926), 40-41.

35) 古筠記念會, 『金玉均傳』(上)(東京: 慶應出版社, 1944); 閔泰環, 『金玉均傳記』(金綺秀, 『修信使記錄』(1971); 『新聞集成明治編年史』(5), 明治15 (1882) 3, 48 所收 『朝鮮新報』明治15 3 15; 同書 10, 163 所收 『東京日日申報』明治15 10 16.

“ (大山) (被占) 가 (擊壤歌) (平淡) 가  
 巖) (威囂) (精銳) 가 3 가 가 가  
 (清國) (願望) '86) 가 38)  
 (上奏) 3,000 가 가  
 '37) 가 가  
 , 가 . ?  
 1863 가 1877 가 14  
 10 ' 1879  
 , 16~17 가 ' ,  
 가 가 .  
 ( ) 가  
 가 가 (廣州)

가 (擊壤歌) (平淡) 가 가 가  
 , 3 3~4 가 가  
 '38)  
 가 가 가 가  
 , ' , .  
 (得策)  
 ( ) 10  
 가  
 (右) (出) 가 가  
 (言下) (不出幾)

36) , ' (2).  
 37) ' From Min Yong Mok to Lucius H. Foote (January 18th, 1884), No. 43, The Collected Letters of Yun Chi Ho(Seoul: The National History Compilation Committee, 1980), pp. 218-219.

38) , ' (2).  
 37) ' From Min Yong Mok to Lucius H. Foote (January 18th, 1884), No. 43, The Collected Letters of Yun Chi Ho, pp. 218-219.  
 38) ' 116 .

日) 15 <sup>39)</sup> 14 <sup>44)</sup>  
(兵學校)가 1873  
(鎮  
1883 5  
40) 5 14 17  
(牛場卓造)  
(松尾三代郎) (比叡號) 가  
(長崎) 가 가  
(千葉)  
(軍體育)  
1883 5 <sup>45)</sup>  
<sup>41)</sup>  
(慶應義塾)  
<sup>42)</sup> (稅務)  
(養蠶)  
<sup>43)</sup>  
12 가 (金子) (偽名)  
2 [sid  
(築地)  
(交遊)  
4 4 )<sup>4)</sup> 『』 17 (1883. 4. 6), 3 : 「昨秋生徒入日本受業 已載前號矣 注書徐載弼外  
一十四人 在日本戶山學校 習上下士官之業 晝宵不懈殊可貴也 特如徐則 係是貴族  
且列朝紳 而受業勤勵 自朝八時至夕四時 在教場受其教授 其外朝夕之暇 特設規則  
學習不已且勤 一十四人皆 其為 故兵技以及兵書算術並皆大進 將近卒業云 徐之勉  
勉如是實屬僅見之 有 觀日本各報」  
4 5 ) , 211 ; 『日本歷史大辭典』(9) 東京: 河出書房新社, 1970), 「陸軍戶山學校」  
條.

3 9 ) , 「 (2).  
4 0 )<sup>4)</sup> 『』 明治16 (1883) 5 14 ; 『新聞集成明治編年史』(5) 明治16 5 ,  
295 所收.  
4 1 ) 東京 5 20 . 『杉木恒吉宛』(明治16年 5月 20日  
字), 『福澤諭吉全集』(17) 東京: 岩波書店, 1971), 549 , No. 553 註.  
牛場卓造가牛場卓藏  
4 2 )<sup>4)</sup> 『東亞先覺志士記傳』(上) (東京: 原書房, 1966), 63 .  
4 3 )<sup>4)</sup> 『』 6 (1883.12.20.), 7 : 「今三月以後 語學生徒 人日本者 前後五十餘人  
多 在於日本之東京慶應義塾 慶應義塾以教授洋學為主 其生徒常不下六七百人 特為  
我國生徒設置一舍 勤心教學 生徒中一人 已卒業轉學洋文 又或有學稅務者 有學養  
蠶法者 有人士官學校學軍制者 究未知來效之如何 而 悉心攻苦宵不懈 日人亦以  
為本國罕比云」.

(寓居)

(肺肝)

(親弟)

1884 4 [siq]

가

가

(猜疑)

(敵意) 가

(引見) , ( )

(禁掖: 闕內)

가

(柔軟體操)

(下命)

(怡悅)

가

(韓圭稷)

(徒

勞) . 6~7 (朔)

(深淵)

. 50)

가

가

(憂國談)

가

가

1

1884 6 8

가

(鴨鷗

. 47)

. 48)

亭邊)

. 51)

가,

. 49)

(內需用)

가

가

가

50) , 「 (2).

51) 『推案及鞫案』: 「甲申大逆不道罪人喜貞等鞫案: 申重模條」, 589 : 「其後 還歸朝鮮亦學士官舊藝 被召入闕 至蒙看品見 差南行部將 日日頻數往來於玉均載弼家 數數從遊 常聞其言 曰各國人 不惜其身得以開化 朝鮮獨立不能焉 甚可恨也 于九月 泳孝要與 偕往押(狎)鷗亭川獵 故矣身與泳孝 人圭完 同往押鷗亭二日而還轉 往塔洞僧房則 玉均·光範·載昌·寅鍾·柳衡魯·點芑·高永錫·朴齊敬(綱)俱在其處 而矣等在其越房 下人處所矣 寅鍾頻數入房而說話」.

46) , 「 (2). 『95-96

47) 『1884 6 8

48) 李光麟, 『 38

49) 『 106

(操鍊局)

52)

53)

54)

가

가 (尹雄烈) “ 가 (精研)

(上京) (入監) (還送) (諸營) (分  
置) ” (上)

55)

56)

가

(招魂祭)

가

(村上)

가

2 (赤白) (旗)

(支那) 가

57)

(强兵策)

#### 4.

가 (結黨)

1

(走狗)

2

(斥華)

(孝宗)

(脫中華思想)

5 2 )<sup>P</sup> 『甲申(1884) 閏 5 24 : 「教曰 操鍊局即統率各營也 各營節制之方 一切管割關防 令該曹 從速造給 先以前營關防 分用事分付」.

5 3 )<sup>P</sup> 『甲申(1884) 6 30 : 「教曰 既設操鍊局矣 不可無士官習藝 前副正子 徐載弼 使之起復 以士官長舉行 又教曰 鍊武方張 此時將領不可遞易 前前營左副領 官李鍾觀 使之起復從戎」.

5 4 )<sup>P</sup> 『甲申(1884) 8 20 : 「以司謁日傳 下教曰 士官長 徐載弼率生徒 使之明日待命」.

5 5 )<sup>P</sup> 『1884 8 19 .

5 6 )<sup>P</sup> 『甲申(1884) 8 29 : 「趙臣熙...又以操鍊局言啓曰 本局新建二百九十九間半間今已 軍役之意 敢啓 傳曰知道」.

5 7 )<sup>P</sup> 『11 6 .



가 .

61)

가 (驅逐)

58)

가

14 (政令)  
(朝貢)

가 (虛禮儀行) 59)

(脫華)

가

(駙馬都尉)  
(猜疑)

(廣州) (留守)

60)

(疎遠)

6

(不如意)

(宗戚) 1

(警巡局)

(治道

局) (主理)

(博文局)

(治道事)

(私囑) (不聽) (私嫌)

(向隅之歎)

( )

... 가 (守禦使) (兵權) 가

(後日之計) (養兵) (

.) ... 1 [sid]

(一言) (免官)

가 (徵上) (前後禦

營) (韓圭稷), (尹泰駿) (領

率下) 가 (淸人) (閔)

(亂政) (魚肉)

가 62)

(閔泳翊)

1882

58) 108-109

59) 12 5

60) 癸未(1883) 3 16 : 「以趙慶鎬爲漢城判尹 朴泳孝爲廣州府留守」

61) 癸未(1883) 10 7 : 「以南廷順爲廣州府留守」

62) , 「 42

“  
 ’63)  
 (戚臣)  
 (芸楣: )가 “ (近日)  
 가 가?” 가 “  
 가? 가 (美)· (英)  
 가?  
 가  
 , 가 가  
 가  
 가? 가  
 (宇內)  
 가? 가 .64)

6 3 )G. M. McCune & J. A. Harrison(ed.), Korean-American Relations, Vol. 1 (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1951), p. 7, Introduction

6 4 )<sup>F</sup> ( ) 1884 11 19 ; , 「 (2)

가 3 (誘因)  
 (清朝) . 1884 6 (安南)

가 .65)  
 (守舊派) .66)  
 가

- 1 :
  - 2 : (沈相薰) (北由)  
(白鹿洞)
  - 3 : (清服) . (李  
祖淵) (閔台鎬) .  
(潰滅) .67)
- 2  
 , 3 가 ,

6 5 )文一平, 『韓米50 : 湖岩全集』(1)( : 朝光社, 1945), 128 ; 崔南善, 『新版 朝鮮歷史』( : 東明社, 1946), 101 .

6 6 )<sup>F</sup>推案及鞫案: 「甲申大逆不道罪人喜貞等鞫案: 申中模條」, 590 : 「泳孝曰 汝以朝鮮人 當有知覺矣 朝鮮乘此時可爲獨立國 而人稟于內 則當有處分 而有頑固黨 幾人每每沮止 事來諧矣 爲先除去此輩然後 可以做事 汝項依吾指揮行之」.

6 7 )<sup>F</sup> 』11 4 ; 文一平, 『史外異聞秘史: 湖岩全集』(3)( : 朝光社, 1946), 78 ;<sup>F</sup> 』122 .



가

『 』<sup>73)</sup>  
『 』<sup>74)</sup> 『 』<sup>75)</sup>

『 』  
『 』

:

(1) 『 』<sup>76)</sup> (前營) (正領官)

(2)

(3) (伊藤博文)<sup>77)</sup>

가

(4)

가

(5) 가 21

가 가

(6) 12 가

(戶曹)

가

가 ?

『 』 1 <sup>78)</sup>

가

5. :

(初夜)

5 (李祖淵·韓圭稷·閔泳

穆·趙寧夏·閔泰鎬) 1 (柳在賢)

6

73) 『 』 40 .

74) 『 』 147 .

75) 『 』 12 4 .

76) 『 』 甲申(1884), 10 18 .

77) 伊藤博文, 『秘書類纂朝鮮交渉資料』(上)(東京: 原書房, 1936), 299-300 : 「甲申10月 18日朝廷任免」.

78) 李光麟, 『 』 114 .

가 , 가  
 79)  
 (精勇)  
 가 가  
 (宣仁門)  
 가 ,  
 (空爆)  
 가 150 ,  
 가 1,500  
 가 ,  
 가 가  
 80)

79) 『 』 156-157 .  
 80) 『 』 , 162-163 .

1,500 81)  
 가 82)  
 가 가  
 (柳赫魯) · (鄭蘭教) · (申應  
 熙) · (邊樹[燧]) 9 83)  
 가 가 84)  
 (小林)  
 (木下)  
 (G. von Möllendorff) (追兵) (安  
 身) 가  
 (千歲丸)  
 가 (辻勝三郎)  
 가 12 11

81) 『 』 43 .  
 82) 『 』 甲申(1884) 10 17 : 「...座皆驚散 金玉均 · 洪英植 · 朴泳孝 · 徐光  
 範 · 徐載弼等 自座中起走 人闕內直至寢殿」  
 83) 『 』 12 6 ; 『 』 167 ; 『 』 甲申(1884) 10 19  
 : 「日公使率兵辭宮 金玉均 · 朴泳孝 · 徐光範 · 徐載弼等 皆隨而去」  
 84) 『 』 甲申(1884), 10 20 : 「時城中軍民 疾視日本人 逢輒歐鬪 多有殺傷  
 日本公使竹添進一郎 率兵保護居留民出城 金玉均 · 朴泳孝 · 徐光範 · 徐載弼及生徒十  
 餘人 皆藏身於日本公使館 髮洋服 潛往仁川港 直逃日本」.

13 가 (長崎) , (橫濱) .

50 1935

(知面)

(奮)

가

起)

가

가 , 1215

3 90

3

(John) (野) (大憲章:

1885 4 (China)

) , 1876 (薩摩) (長州) .

2 4

(土佐) (大名) (將軍) (王侯的)

85)

(版籍奉還)

(前例) (靈感)

(前二者)

86)

(他)

(幾個人)

(徐載昌) (斬刑)

(徐

光孝) 11 2 (星州)

(光山) 가 12 ,

.... 87)

11 1895

가

(愚民觀)

85) 167-174 閔泰瑗, 76-77

86) 甲申(1884), 10 20 :「院議啓 以爲今日之變 常忍言哉...金玉均·洪英植·朴泳孝·徐光範·徐載弼等 函令拿鞠正刑焉 批...兩司聯筭略...噫 古今天下寧有如今番諸賊 金·洪·朴·徐·徐等之變逆大 者乎」; 同 10 22 :「時 原任大臣聯筭略 今番玉均等五賊之窮凶極惡 卽剖判後 所未聞之變也」.

87) , 「 (2).

(ill-advised young men) <sup>88)</sup>

, 188

<sup>89)</sup>

(對日)

, 150

1,500

(順成)

(朋黨)

가?

(清人)

(尹雄烈)

<sup>90)</sup>

6

가, (清) · (韓)

1) (君)

(順)

(逆)

2)

가

가

가

3)

(不服)

(變)

가

가 가

4)

가

(Homer B. Hulbert)

가?

5) 가

(上)

(乾坤殿)

(君父母)

가?

가

6)

<sup>91)</sup>

8 8 )' Despatch from L. H. Foote to the Secretary of State (December 17, 1884), G. M.

McCune and J. A. Harrison (ed.), Korean-American Relations, Vol. 1, p. 98, No.

128

8 9 )李光麟, 『

』 175 .

9 0 ) 『 』 1884 12 19 .

9 1 )H. B. Hulbert, The Passing of Korea(New York: William Heinemann, 1907), p.

122; 申福龍(譯註), 『 』 : , 1999), p. 158.





明治 1876

가

2)

가

가

가

3)

가

가

1)

蔑日·反日觀

4)

III.

隣邦

1882

1) Liem, C., American Finest Gift to Korea, 玄鐘敏, 『徐載弼 韓國民主主義』(1990)[ American Finest Gift ] 所收 p. 189.

2) "Western Penetration"; The New Korea(July 7, 1938), in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, ed. by S. Hong(Yonsei University Press, 1999)[ My Days ], p. 5.

3) "Korea and China"; Korean Review(Feb., 1920), in My Days, p.196

4) "Western Penetration"; in My Days, p. 5.

가

. 1883 5 13

6

14

(戶山)

7

‘ 1881 ’ 明治  
가 가 ,

가

6)

가 . 가 가 對清

13 ,

5)

‘ 激化事件 ’ 1882 1884

가 ,

—

가

7)

慶應義塾

가

慶應義塾

가 時事新報

1884 10 操鍊局 士官長

1,500

IV.

5) 山縣有朋, 「陸海軍擴張につき上申」, 『近代日本思想大系 4, 軍隊 兵士』(岩波書店, 1989) pp. 288-290.

6) 「徐載弼氏會見記」, 『三千里』(1948. 7.), p. 4.

7) American's Finest Gift, p. 193.

가

12 4

가

8)

, 1884 6

가

1885 4

天津條約

. 1885 4

가

가

가

가

가

가

9)

V.

가

10

가

. 1885

, 1889

가

8 ) American's Finest Gift, p. 197.

9 ) " Mistakes of the Reformers ;" The New Korea(Aug. 25, 1938), in My Days, p. 22.

.10)

가

1895

1894

가 1883 ~ 1884

1885

(1894. 8.1).

(1894. 7.16),

. 1896 2

1895 4

가

. 1896 4 『

가

10

가

1895

[ ]

가

가

1882

가 .11)

1896

1894

가 , 1898

. 1884

가 ,

가

가

1 0 ) 姜在彦, 「 『 』 ( , 1992)

『 (2001) 轉載, p. 80.

1 1 ) 古筠紀念會 編, 『金玉均傳』上(慶應出版社, 1944), p. 147.

가 . 1922

가

1914

1

, 가1915 21

. 1918 1

. 1919

1921

1919

3 - 1

가 .

1

1918 12 19 ,

가

.<sup>12)</sup>

2

‘ ’

VI.

.<sup>13)</sup>

1898

,

가

가

,

가

20

1918 1

1919

3 - 1

. 가

가

1 2 )" Russo-Japanese Diplomatic Dual Brought War "; The New Korea(Nov. 2, 1939), in My Days, p. 149.

1 3 )" " (1919. 2. 20),





, 1930

.17)

가 .  
가  
가 가

.18)

가

19)

가

17) "Japan's Aggression in China"; The New Korea(July 22, 1937), in My Days, p. 288

18) "Japanese Militarism and World Peace"; The New Korea(Sept. 16, 1937), in My Days, pp. 300-301.

19) "Foreigners in Old Korea"; The New Korea(Dec. 7, 1939) in My Days, p. 148.

가

가

가

.20)

.21)

가

가

.22)

20) "Japan is Desperate"; The New Korea(Oct. 14, 1937), in My Days, p. 309.

21) "Japan Faces Setbacks in Central China"; The New Korea(Apr. 28, 1938), in My Days, p. 336.

22) "War in China and the Future of Mankind"; The New Korea(Apr. 4, 1940) in My Days, p. 165.



VIII.

가

가

가

1883

1

. 10

가

‘反日’

1898

가

. 1919

. 1922

1937

가

가

가

가

1.

(士官)

가

가

가19

(Perry)

가

가

19

(條約)

(開港)

가

가

가

가

19

, 1883

1884

(戶山)

13

가

가

가

. 1882

가

. 1880

가

(教鍊兵隊, 別技

가

軍)

가

가

가

1880

(福澤諭吉)

2. : 가

가.

가.

가

1882

가

1876

1879-1880

李東

仁

,<sup>1)</sup>

1) 1948

가

『(1948; .)』

『(1972), 94 . (』

金道泰,

1880 10  
가

1880 , 1881

1882 3  
가



, 1882 12

12 ( 8 1 ) 1883 1 6

가

가

(金晩植),

(徐光範),

(閔泳翊),

建親軍) , 5

(袁世凱)

(新

(王得功)

(何增珠)

가

8)

가 .11)

9)

12)

(右大臣)

(岩倉具視)

가

(伊藤博文)

(參事院)

가

(山縣有

朋) 1882 8

13)

가

8 ) 崔炳鈺, , 166-170 . 金世恩, 『軍史』22

(1991), 90-91 .

9 ) 1882 10 ( 8 23 ) 朝清商民水陸貿易章程 7

(兵船)

가

1 0 ) 金允植 『陰晴史』 가 1882-1884 . 原田

環 「甲申政變と朝鮮の近代化構想」 『朝鮮の開國と近代化』(溪水社, 1997), 312

1 1 ) 『 가

( , 1999), 25-33 . 琴秉洞, , 86-105 .

1 2 ) 井上馨傳記編纂會 『世外井上公傳』 第3券(原書房, 1968), 492-495 , 安岡昭男, 「井上馨論」 日本國際政治學會編 『日本外交史研究 : 外交指導者論』(有斐閣, 1967), 6-7 . 芝原拓自, 「對外觀とナショナリズム」 芝原拓自, 猪隆飼明, 池田正博, 『對外觀 : 日本近代思想大系12』(岩波書店, 1989), 479-481 . 大澤博明, 「明治前期の朝鮮政策と統合力 : そのアジア主義的傾向を中心に」 日本政治學會編 『日本外交におけるアジア主義』(岩波書店, 1999)

1 3 ) 『

: , 1997) 7 .

가 .

‘ (問罪) ’  
14)

(慶應義塾)  
가 17)

1882 12 (井上馨)

‘ , 가  
, 가

,  
가

가 가 .

(餘)

1883 1 ,

(心事) (察知)  
18)

가 , “

(我國)

가

15) 가

1882 12

가 가

16)

17) \_\_\_\_\_ 後藤象二郎  
(正金) 17

14) 「文書番號510, 明治15年8月6日 福澤諭吉 岩倉具視宛」慶應義塾編纂 『福澤諭吉全集』第17券(岩波書店, 1971), 516 . 福澤諭吉 8 6

가 三條實美 太政大臣 問罪 師  
『立憲政黨』8 12 , 琴乘洞, , 69

15) , 「甲申日記」金永鎮 譯 閔泰瑗, 『 : 國際文化協會, 1948) 108 . 『甲申日記』

16) 芝原拓自, , 480 .

牛場卓造 井上角五郎

琴乘洞, , 94-101 , 富田正文 『考證福澤諭吉』  
下(岩波書店, 1992) 592-593 . 1883 3

50 . 「文書番號526, 明治16年1月4日 福澤諭吉 早矢仕有的宛」 「文書番號542, 明治16年3月16日 福澤諭吉 莊田平五郎宛」, 『福澤諭吉全集』第17券, 529 540 .

18) , 『甲申日記』, , 107 .

1882 10

19) 1883 1 (朴  
裕宏, 15 )  
가 20)

(申福摸)

21)

1883 1 3

(上

月)

22)

19) 尹雄烈 17 가  
5 琴秉洞, 94  
20) 朴裕宏( 15 ) 『自由新誌』1882 10  
28 『東京日日新聞』1882 12 8 『新聞集成明治編年史』  
5 169, 188  
1886 , 1887 4  
石光眞清 『城下の人:石  
光眞清の手記』(中央公論社, 1978), 202-208  
21) 『修信使記録』 長坂照徳 申福摸  
32 申福摸  
1881 11 28 1 1882 11 15  
術科 申福摸  
가 申福摸  
『戸山學校沿革取調』『戸山學校歴誌: 陸軍教育史別記』12 『防衛研究  
所戰史部』  
松尾三代太郎, 元田一  
石河幹明, 『福  
澤諭吉傳』 3 (岩波書店, 1932), 293  
22) 琴秉洞, 100

1883 1 7  
(廣州留守)

가4 23

23)

(親軍)

(養兵)

24)

200 3

25)

1883 4 22

(東南諸島開拓使)

(捕鯨使)

26)

23) 가 『時事新報』1883 6 5 , 9 28 , 1884  
1 9 『時事新報』 『時事新報: 福澤諭吉生誕  
150年記念出版復刻板』(龍溪書舎, 1986)  
24) 崔炳鈺, 166-170 金世恩, 90-91  
25) 『矩堂居士略史』<sup>26)</sup> 5卷, 鄭容和, 『  
』( , 1998), 38-39 45  
26) 金道泰, 『』 95 琴秉洞, 110-111





가 , 가

가 , 5 21 5  
20 .

(牛場卓造) (來京)  
가

17 .

徐載弼( 取締), 徐載昌, 金益

昇, 安寧洙, 尹泳觀, 李秉虎, 金永煥, 金漢琦, 申載永, 申應熙, 李建英, 白樂雲, 鄭行徵, 林殷明, 申重模, 李菊喜, 趙昶教<sup>35)</sup>

가

(牛場卓造) 5 12 가

5 20 ,

(取締),

『時事新報』

7 6 7 7

‘朴泳斌, 朴準陽, 朴永祐, 李春永, 嚴柱興, 兪亨濬, 鄭光徹, 鄭蘭教, 鄭勳教, 李奎完, 河應善, 鄭鍾振’

12 ,

7

2, 3

<sup>36)</sup> 11 14

‘兪性濬, 徐光轍, 金良默, 李鳳弼, 李圭禎’ 5

3 5 ) 『時事新報』明治16年(1883) 5月21日.

3 6 ) 1883 7 19 福澤諭吉

福澤一太郎 福澤捨次郎

‘高橋正信 1

, 井上(井上角五郎: )

. 17 6

, 12 , 高橋가

(兩) 3 , 非常 多人數가

. 『福澤諭吉全

集』 17 , 565 .

( )

(右) (出)

가

(不出幾日)

<sup>32)</sup>

李圭完

<sup>33)</sup>

申重模

<sup>34)</sup>

1883 5 3-4

1883 5 14 『時事新報』 17 5 12

3 2 ) , 「 , 82 .

3 3 ) , 『 ( , 1958), 28-33 .

3 4 ) 「大逆不道罪人貞喜等鞫案: 申重模條」 『推案及鞫案』 , 185

.37) 1883 5 11

36

.38)

가

.39)

가

1

7

가

가

17 本邸 飯田三次 가請持 世話

가

.41)

‘飯田三次 ( )

5 24

(煩)

.42)

(華翰)

(電信)

(實

(飯田三次, 飯田三治)

地) (拜見)

3, 4

(着京)

.43)

가

가

.40)

4.0) 「文書番號553, 明治16年5月24日 福澤諭吉 杉本吉宛」『福澤諭吉全集』第17券, 549

37) 『時事新報』明治16年(1883) 11月19日.

38) 『慶應義塾

60, 「」 40, 『』 61

『慶應義塾五十年史』(1907), 539, 「」 ↓, 83-84

金道泰, 『』 95

39) 福澤諭吉

石河幹明 『福澤諭吉傳』第3券(岩波書店, 1932), 297

2 1882 9 1883 3

4.1) 「文書番號567, 明治16年7月1日井上角五郎宛」『福澤諭吉全集』第17券, 560

4.2) 「明治16年7月19日 福澤諭 福澤一太郎・福澤捨次郎宛」, 『福澤諭吉全集』第17券, 565

4.3) 『時事新報』 1883 7 6 「」 『慶應義塾

가 (金子) 가 6

義塾 가 金道泰, 『』 95

44)

가

, 45) 1883 6

46)

47)

4 4 ) 1884

. 「文書番號 648, 明治17年4月17日 福澤諭吉 飯田三治宛」 「文書番號 660, 明治17年6月1日 福澤諭吉 飯田三治宛」 『福澤諭吉全集』 第17券, 659, 673 가 1 5

, 1895 飯田三治 . 富田 正文, 『考證福澤諭吉』(下)(岩波書店, 1992) 695-696 .

4 5 ) 慶應義塾, 『慶應義塾五十年史』(1907), 539 . 『 가 , . 金道泰, 『

』 96 .

4 6 ) 1883 6 28 1884 4 . 琴乘洞, , 110-135. 『時事新報』 1883 6 29 .

4 7 ) 石河幹明, 『福澤諭吉傳』 第3券(岩波書店, 1932), 297 . 慶應義塾 金 漢琦 『慶應義塾入社帳』 第15號(明治16年2月-明治16年10月)(マイクロフ イルム版福澤關係文書: 慶應義塾關係資料(一)所收) 『時事新報』 1883 9 14

. 9 10 『時事新報』 「留學武官」

가

10 가 1

(下士)

가

9

9 12

가가

10 3

48)

10 8 『時事新報』

韓人兵學傳習 -

3

. ( ) 徐載弼 ( ) 申應灝, 林殷明, 鄭行徵, 申重 模, 白樂雲, 李秉虎, 李建英, 李奎完, 尹泳觀, 鄭蘭教, 朴應學, 河應

4 8 ) 教育總監部 『戶山學校歷誌: 陸軍教育史別記第12卷資料』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所 藏資料).

善, 鄭鐘振<sup>49)</sup>

13

가

(曹長), (軍曹), (伍長)

9 6 10

13

50)

4

(鎮臺)

4.

51)

1883 7 14

1

(

. 1880

) (專科)

(操法)

1873 8

(兵學寮)

52)

, 1874

. 1875

가

2

3

5 0 )

4 9 )

慶應義塾 『明治16年度入社帳』

가 가 (臣僕),

가 , ,

1997), 10 金道泰, 『 』 96 . 『 ( ,

1958), 33 가 , 申應灝, 林殷明, 鄭行徵, 申重模, 白

樂雲, 李秉虎, 李建英, 尹泳觀, 鄭蘭教 5 20 , 李奎完,

河應善, 鄭鐘振 7 . 朴應學 가 不明 .

1912 가 . 『陸軍步兵學校略歷』, 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記第20券 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料) 澤尚信, 『陸軍戶山學校略史』(長田印刷, 1969), 26 .

5 1 ) 教育總監部 「戶山學校沿革取調」 『戶山學校歷誌: 陸軍教育史別記 第12卷資料』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料) 「陸軍戶山學校沿革」 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記 第12卷 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料, 年代不明) . 篠原宏 『陸軍創設史: フランス軍事顧問團の影』(リポロ-ト, 1983 ) 374 .

5 2 ) 「陸軍省達 乙 第82號, 陸軍戶山學校條例 改正」, 『官報』1883 7 14 . 明治編年史編纂會, 『新聞集成明治編年史』第5卷(財政經濟史學會, 1935), 323

(堀江芳介) 15 101

<sup>53)</sup>

2-3

가 가

1873 1 42 ,

123 , 21 186 1880

7 <sup>54)</sup> 1880

(修業生)

(後備役)

(曹長) (少尉試補)

가 가

1883 9 15 41 2 <sup>55)</sup>

(監軍) ,

가

1883 12 26 1 62

1884 7 1

1883 가

가

1883

10 3

14 , 9 41

2

1881 11 28

(張大鏞), (申福摸)

1882 1 14

1882 11 15

5 3 澤尚信, 『陸軍戶山學校略史』(長田印刷, 1969), 42-43 . 堀江芳介 1884 1888

篠原宏, , 439-442 .

5 4 ) 『陸軍戶山學校沿革』, 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記 第12卷 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料) 『陸軍教育史: 陸軍戶山學校ノ部』, 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記 第12卷 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料)

5 5 ) 『陸軍教育史: 陸軍戶山學校ノ部』, 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記 第12卷 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料). 『時事新報』1883 6 11

<sup>56)</sup>

5.6) 가 步兵操典, 步兵野外練習軌典, 射的教程, 算學, (術科) 步兵操典, 步兵野外練習軌典, 射的教程, 體操, 路上製圖教育總監部, 『戶山學校沿革取調』, 『戶山學校歷史: 陸軍教育史別記 第12卷資料』(日本防衛研究所戰史部 所藏資料, 年代 不明)

1879

13

1882 10

(村田銃)

(路上測圖), (步兵操典), (射的教程),  
(軌典),

(村田經芳)가

(術科)

가

(生兵) 1 2 ,  
가

57)

59)

1883 7

180

60)

61)

5

58)

1884 3 8 4 18

가

2

1

5

5 9 )

巖(1935), 509

. 1884 4 28

村田經芳

大山元帥傳編纂委員會『元帥公爵大山

『時事新報』福澤諭吉

小石川

가 3,300-3,500 (3,000

) , 1 25 , 8-9

6 0 澤尚信, 『陸軍戶山學校略史』(長田印刷, 1969), 16 .

6 1 )

『 ( , 1958), 44-45 , 『 ( , 149

5 7 ) 教育總監部, 『戶山學校沿革取調』, 『戶山學校歷誌: 陸軍教育史別記 第12卷資料』( ) 『陸軍教育史: 陸軍戶山學校ノ部』, 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記 第12卷 陸軍戶山學校之部』(日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料)

5 8 ) 鈴木淳

鈴木淳『蘭式・英式・佛式: 諸藩の兵制導入』横浜對外關係史研究會・横浜開港資料館編『横浜英佛駐屯軍と外國人居居留地』(東京堂出版, 1999), 225-227 .

(習志野原) 3  
 (下總) (九十九里)  
 1 2  
 62) 6  
 14 가 63)  
 가

가  
 2  
 (大隊學),  
 (測圖),  
 64)

6 2 ) 『時事新報』1884 3 7 教育總監部, 『戸山學校歷誌: 陸軍教育史別記第12卷資料』( )  
 6 3 ) 14 가 『時事新報』1884 2 25 「」  
 『時事新報』1884 3 13 「」  
 6 4 ) 「陸軍教育史: 陸軍戸山學校ノ部」 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記第12卷陸軍戸山學校之部』 (日本防衛研究所戰史部 所藏資料), 56

가 ,  
 , , , ,  
 가  
 가  
 (將材) ,  
 가  
 65)  
 9  
 가 ,  
 가 『時事新報』  
 6 5 ) 金道泰, 『 』 96 .

1883 10 29 『時事新報』 「韓人 (勉強)」  
 ( ? )  
 18  
 『時事新報』 1884 2 28  
 가  
 가 外山 ( : ) (上下)  
 14  
 14  
 8 4 (兵式)  
 (策勵) (歸宿)  
 (策勵)  
 66)

66) 『時事新報』, 1884 2 28, 「朝鮮兵學生」  
 1884 5 31

, 1881  
 14 8<sup>67)</sup>  
 가  
 (築地)  
 300  
 1883 6 15 1884 4 9  
 , 가 가 (勝海舟),  
 68)  
 1883 8 1  
 69) 5

67) 崔炳鈺, , 142 .  
 68) 3 琴秉洞, , 111-135  
 69) 閔泳翊, 洪英植, 隨員  
 『時事新報』 1883 8 2 8 18 가



72)

70)

가

가

14 8

5 31

『時事新報』1884 5 30

「朝鮮人兵學卒業」 徐載弼, 申應灝, 林殷明, 鄭行徵, 申重模, 白樂雲, 李秉虎, 李建英, 李圭完, 尹泳觀, 鄭蘭教, 朴應學, 河應善, 鄭鐘振 教則

31 卒業證

71)

가

가

가

7 1

73)

가7 1

72)

가 가

1897 2 15 『』 6

70) 『書趙忠定公傳』 『俞吉濬全書』 5 264-265 . 鄭容和, 42 . 後藤象二郎 福澤諭吉 『擬似朝鮮策略』 ,

『琴秉洞, 121-123 .

71) 『』 , 84-85 . 가 「大逆不道罪人貞喜等鞫案: 申重模條」 『推案及鞫案』 , 185 .

『』 가 『時事新報』 1884 7 7 「戶山學校卒業生」 『陸軍教育史: 陸軍戶山學校ノ部』 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記第12券陸軍戶山學校之部』 (日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料) . 가 ( : , 1996), 117 . 73) 『時事新報』 1884 7 7 「戶山學校卒業生」 『陸軍教育史: 陸軍戶山學校ノ部』 『陸軍教育史: 明治別記第12券陸軍戶山學校之部』 (日本防衛研究所戰史部所藏資料) .

74)

가 , 가  
가 가

, 가  
가

75)

5.

1883 1884

가

가

74) 『時事新報』1884 7 4

75) 14 가 , 朴

應學, 鄭行徵, 尹泳觀, 河應善, 李秉虎, 李建英, 白樂雲, 申重模 8 , ,  
林殷明, 李圭完, 申應熙, 鄭

蘭教, 鄭種振 6 . 李光麟, 『』 』( ,  
1979), 103 , , 198

林殷明 『』 』( , 1958), 46

. 鄭種振 , , 35 .

가

가

가

가

가

가

76)

가

‘用日’

76) 福澤諭吉

. 坂野潤治 , 福澤諭吉

, 坂野潤治, 『明治・思想の  
實像』(創文社, 1977). 51-56 . 高崎宗司 福澤 隣國 가

‘誘導’ . 高崎宗司, 『福澤諭吉の朝鮮論と開  
化派』『三千里』40 (1984), 46 . 三谷博 가

, 가 ,  
, 가 ,  
6  
, 가  
가 가  
가 가  
가 가  
, 가 , 가

, 가  
가 가 가 가  
가  
14  
가가 , ,

---

福澤諭吉 . 三谷博, 「比較史上の明治維新: 過程と特  
徴」『明治維新とナショナリズム』(山川出版社, 1997), 341 . 杵淵信雄 福澤

. 杵淵信雄 『福澤諭吉と朝鮮: 時事新報社説を中心に』(彩流社, 1997) .

가

가

가

100

(1885)

가

100

가

, 『 』

가

- 1) 1 (1896.1.)
- 2) 2 (1898.5.)
- 3) (1926.9.)
- 4) (1945.8.)
- 5) (1951.5.)

1. 1 (1896.1, 32 )

(Hillman Academy)

(Easton)

(Lafayette)

, 1888 1

(Davis) 가

(Smithsonian)

(Otis)

(John Billings) , 가  
1893 4  
가 ,  
, 1893 5 (George Miller Sternberg)  
가 .  
50 ,  
23 가 ,  
. 가 (Index-Catalogue)  
(Index-Medicus) , 가 11  
, 가 12  
(Walter Reed) 가  
(Professor of Clinical and Sanitary Microscopy) 1883 가  
, (Johns Hopkins)  
(George Washington) 가  
(Columbian) , 1889  
9 .3 가  
1892 3 , 28 .  
가 (Garfield)

가

(Johnson)

가

1

. 1894 6 20 가

(Muriel Armstrong)

『(Washington Post)』

“  
...”

1885 4

31

가

가

가

가

1896

1

2. 2

(1896.1 ~ 1898.5, 34 )

가

16

『 』

가

『 』  
1896 5 12

가

“

.....”

가 (1896.5.15).

가 (1896.5.15)

(1896.8.25)

가 (1896.12.1)

가 (1897.4.8) ,

가 (1898.2.12) , 가

가 .

3. (1898.5 ~ 1926.9, 62 )

1898 5 .

가

(Hodge) . 12

, 1948

( ) “ . 1914 1

16 .” Philip Jaisohn( , 1980) 1898 12 1905 Wistar Institute of Anatomy and Biology

( , 1984) “

가 가 .” .  
 (Wistar) , ,  
 가  
 1903 (Horace Jaine) 가

“ For nearly 6 months of the year, the Directors, with the assistance of Dr. Stotsenbery and Dr. Jaisohn, were engaged in the preparation of dissection of the human muscular system for display in the Museum.”

6  
 가  
 1905 1926  
 ( , ) 60

4. (1926.9 ~ 1945.8.15, 81 )  
 , 20

1926 9  
 가 2 가  
 , , , , .  
 1927 6  
 (Polyclinic)  
 (Jeanes)  
 . 1926 , 가  
 1929  
 가 ,  
 (Reading) (St. Joseph)  
 , 가 ,  
 1. (Berks County) 10 ( , 1930)  
 An Epidemic of Trichinosis in Berks County. *Oct. 1930, Penn. Med. J.*, pp. 16-17. From the Department of Pathology, St. Joseph's Hospital, Reading, PA.  
 2. 8 ( , 1930)  
 Sarcoma of Ovary in a Child Eight Years Old. *JAMA 95: Oct. 11, 1930.*, pp. 1097-1098. From the Department of Pathology, St. Joseph's Hospital, Reading, PA.  
 3. 1 ( , 1931)  
 Physical and Chemical Changes of Spinal Fluid as Diagnostic Aid for Spinal Tumors. *Penn. Med. J., Oct. 1931.*, pp. 7-9. From the Department of



Pathology, St. Joseph's Hospital, Reading, PA.

20 70 , 2~3 5

, 1933 (Charleston)

1935 (Chester)

가

. 1936

1. 1 ( , 1933)

(Crozer Cherter)

Carcinoma of the Epididymus, *JAMA 100: April 1, 1933.*, pp. 1021-1022,  
P. Jaisohn and E. V. Jordan: From the Department of Pathology, Charleston  
General Hospital, Charleston, WV.

. 1941 2

4

2. 가 가?

1945 1

, 1934)

Do the Normal Cells Change to Cancer Cells under Hormonal Influence?  
*West Virginia Medical Journal, Sept. 1934.*, pp. 414-415. From the  
Department of Pathology, Charleston General Hospital, Charleston, WV.

5. (1945.8 ~ 1951.1, 86 )

80



1944 8 23  
2  
Philadelphia  
Record

. 80  
가

1947 1 (Hodge)

1 8

가

. 86 1951 1 5

Norristown,

PA (Montgomery)

가

1) 1892 ~ 1893 가

가

2) 1898

가

3) 1898 ~ 1905

가

Wistar Institute

가

4) 1905 ~ 1926

가

5) 1927



1947 9 가 (가), 孫金聲

가

“ , 가

1. Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, The First Korean-american; a Forgotten Hero, 1984, The Philip Jaisohn memorial Foundation, Kyujang Publishing Company, Korea
2. 『 』 ( : , 1984)
3. 『 』 ( : , 1993)
4. 鄭求忠, 『韓國醫學 開拓者( )』 ( : , 1987)
5. 玄鍾敏, 『徐載弼 韓國民主義』 ( : 大韓教科書株式會社, 1990)
6. 玄鳳學, 『醫師 徐載弼』 (上·下)
7. 『 (美洲東亞, 1994.1.36)
8. 『 ( , 1999)
9. 『 가 (1,2,3,4)』 (美洲東亞, 1994.1.3 6)
10. 『 (25 ) , 2000, pp. 22-32
11. Philip Jaisohn, M.D.(edited by Sun-Pyo Hong); My Days in Korea and Other Essays 1999, Yonsei University Press.

10

. 1884

가,

‘ 1

. 1927

1947

“

49

< 1994.6.1 >

가

43

1886 1

『 』

1898

. 1948

가

가

가

가

가

가

가 가

가

가

!

1

가

가

1994 4 2



| : |

1. 1

1882 ( 18 )

( )

14

1 2 (1883.5 ~ 1884.7)

( )

1884 12 4 ( )

(正領

官) ' 3 ' ,

(邊燧) 4  
 가 , .  
 1885 4 .  
 가 , .  
 가 ,  
 가 (John Welles Hollenback) 가  
 1886 9 Hillman Academy) 3 1888 (Harry  
 ' Philip Jaisohn ' .  
 (Lafayette) .  
 가  
 ' ,  
 ,  
 ( )  
 (Corcoran School)  
 1889 ( 25 ) (Columbian Medical  
 College: )

1892 2 .<sup>1)</sup>  
 1890 , 1894 ( )  
 ) (Muriel Amstrong)  
 가  
 .  
 ( ) 가 .  
 가 ,  
 D.C. , , 가  
 .  
 1894 7 가 ' .  
 , 1894 12 2  
 , 1895 3  
 1 ,  
 .<sup>2)</sup>  
 1895 6  
 朴定陽 ,  
 外部協辦  
 .<sup>3)</sup>  
 . 1 『外部請議書』 ,  
 가 가 免本

1) 『 』 1893 8 14 ( ), 3 , 148  
 2) 『奏本』(議政府 編) 第4冊, 開國504 3 1 , 「奏本 第14號」, 「復官爵秩」 .  
 3) 『外部請議書』(內閣編錄課 編) 第1冊, 開國504 5 10 「請議 第2號」 .

官 <sup>4)</sup> 5 가 2. 『 』  
1895 10

가 <sup>5)</sup> 가 1895 11  
9 3

<sup>6)</sup> D.C. , 1895 가 가  
11 10 <sup>7)</sup> 1895 12 10 가  
26 <sup>8)</sup> , 10

(H. G. Appenzeller)

<sup>9)</sup> 가 ( )

가 <sup>10)</sup>

4) 『請議書』第1冊, 開國50年閏5 17 , 「請議 第7號」  
5) 『金道泰 編), 首善社, 1948, 167-168  
6) 『外部內閣來去文』(外部編) 第2冊, 開國50 11 9 「照會」 「任官請議書」  
7) 『(報告)』(Communication to the Secretary of State from U.S. Representative in Korea: H. N. Allen) No. 101. 1898 4 27 'Dismissal of Dr. Jaisohn, an American Adviser to the Korean Government'  
8) 『1895 12 26  
9) Phillip Jaisohn(edited by Sun-pyo Hong), My Days in Korea and Other Essays, Yonsei University Press, 1999, 157-160 『212

1883  
『 』, 1894 ~ 1895  
10) 『1896 1 28 『206

11) “  
( )

(The same idea was suggested to me by  
some of the friends of progress then in official position)”<sup>12)</sup>

3

3,000

가 1,400 4,400

13)

, 300 10

14)

1896 1

( ) 4

1

『 』

『 (漢城新

1 1 )Phillip Jaisohn(Edited by Sun-pyo Hong), My Days in Korea and Other Essays,  
Yonsei University Press, 1999, 26-28

1 2 )The Independent, 1898 5 17 , ‘ A Parting Word ’

1 3 )『度支部來去衆』(外部編) 第15冊, 2 4 28 , 「照會第24號」 4 29  
「照覆第15號」

1 4 )『 』 1897 8 8

報)』

小村壽太郎

,<sup>15)</sup>小

村

‘ ’

가

1896 1 31

( - )

가

『가

가

가

!<sup>16)</sup>

小村

가

1 5 )『 』 1896 2 2 2 4

1 6 )『 』 1896 1 31

小村

.<sup>17)</sup> 가  
가 1896 2 2

.<sup>18)</sup>

.<sup>19)</sup>

.<sup>20)</sup>

1896 2 11 ‘ ,  
,金炳始

가

朴定陽

李範晋, 李

允用, 李完用

閔泳煥, 尹致昊, 李商在, 李采淵 (建

17) 1896 1 31

18) 1896 2 2

19) 1896 2 4

20) 1896 2 9

陽) 朴定陽, 安壽, 韓圭高, 金嘉鎮, 金宗漢

가

.<sup>21)</sup>

朴定陽

가

3,000

1,400

4,400

.<sup>22)</sup>

.<sup>23)</sup>

』

.<sup>24)</sup>

1896 3 13

.<sup>25)</sup>

孫承鏞 2 ,

( ) The Independent

21) 212

22) 『外部內閣來去文』(外部編) 2 3 24 , 「照會第3號」 3 25 「照會第4號」

23) 『美案』 2028, 3 7 18

24) 『農商工部來去文』(外部編) 第6冊, 2 6 3 , 「照覆第8號」 6 23 , 「照覆第9號」

25) 『農商工部去牒存案』(農商工部編) 第1冊 3 11 3 13 「充任 請議 第14號」



該新報

該新報

28)

( ) 150 , ( ) 50 , 가 15

26)

『 』 1896 3 1

『 』 『 』

27)

『 』 가

가 1

『 』 1896 4 7 『 』 가

가

『 』

『 』 『 』

『 』 ( )

가

( )

『 』

29)

“ 가 理非 別

芟除

가 ,

....

目( ) 該新報

(『漢城新報』)

『 』 가

『 』 가

26) 『駐韓日本公使館記錄』(機密本省往信) 1898 (明治31 ) 1 15 , 「機密第3號, 獨立新聞買受ノ件」 『 』 214

27) 『 』 1896 1 28

28) 『駐韓日本公使館記錄』(機密本省往信) 1896 (明治29 ) 5 30 , 「機密第3號, 漢城新報ノ補助金増額ニ關スル件」

29) 『 』 1896 4 7

가 ....

가

3.

『 』 ,  
(迎恩門)

“

가

’81)

30)

『 』

『 』 ( )  
( )

1896 7 2

( )

( )

1 , 1 , 20 , 20 , 1

2 가

3 0 ) 『 』 1896 4 7 , .

3 1 ) 朴殷植, 『韓國獨立運動之血史』 『朴殷植全書』 , 456 .

32)

33)

: 安壽

: 金嘉鎮, 金宗漢, 閔商鎬, 李采淵, 權在衡, 玄興澤, 李根浩

: 宋憲斌, 沈宜碩, 鄭顯哲, 彭翰周, 玄濟復, 李啓

弼, 朴承組, 洪禹觀

가 가

가

3

1 ' 1896 1897 8

28

가

2 ' , 1897 8 29 1898

2 20 가

3 ' , 1898 2 21

가 12 25

租借

가 ' ,

34)

: 尹致昊

: 李商在

: , 韓晚容

: 南宮憶, 鄭喬

: , 李建鎬, 鄭喬, 方漢德, 金斗鉉, 廉仲莫, 金龜

鉉, 劉猛, 玄濟昶, 鄭恒謨, 洪正厚, 趙漢禹, 卞河進, 尹泰興, 羅

壽淵, 林鎮洙 20

3 2 )<sup>F</sup> 』 1 , 1896 11 30 , 「

3 3 )<sup>F</sup> 』 1896 7 4 ,

3 4 )<sup>F</sup> 』 1898 8 30 「 ( ) 」 『大韓季年史』 , 1898 9

1898 5 14 ' 2 ,

가 '

1898 2 7

35)

1898 3 10

民共同會

萬

36)

, 『 』

3 10 2 가

37)

3 5 ) 『 』 1898 2 7 , .

3 6 ) 『大韓季年史』 , 182 , 「時堤仙(徐載弼) 密請鄭喬 議定韓俄銀行大爲關係 俄國 士官之雇用限期已滿 可設萬民共同會于鍾街」 .

3 7 ) 『 』 1898 3 10 , .

4. . .

『 』

38) 1 1895 2

. 1896 6 , 6 20

The Independent

( ) ' (Independent

Arch)

彫銘

...

가 , 가

3 8 ) The Korean Repository, 1898 8 , ' The Independence Club '285 『 』 201-202 .

39) . . . . .

2 ' . . . . .

40) . . . . .

9 6 3,825 . . . . .

7 2 ' . . . . .

1896 . . . . .

( ) 41) Sabati [사바티]

42) (沈宜碩) 43)

44) 石工 45)

3 9 )The Independent, 1896 6 20 , ' Editorial

4 0 )<sup>p</sup> 1 , 1896 11 30 , 「 . . . . . 」 .

4 1 )The Korean Repository, 1897 11 , ' Edition Department '438 .

4 2 )<sup>p</sup> 202-203 The Korean Repository 1898 8 , ' The Independence Club '285 .

4 3 )<sup>p</sup> 1898 1 18 , .

4 4 )<sup>p</sup> 1 , 1896 11 30 , 「獨立協會輪告」 <sup>p</sup> 1896 7 4 , .

4 5 )The Korean Repository, 1897 11 , ' The Independence Club '438 .

(苦力) 46)

(定礎式) 1896 11

21 2 . . . . . 5,000 ~ 6,000

가 47) 1 1897

11 20 48)

(慕華館)

가가

{Independence Pavilion}

49) 2,000

, 1897 5 가 50) 가

, 1897 5 23 가 ( )

51)

3 ' , ' .

(Independence Park) 가

가 1897 5

4 6 )<sup>p</sup> 1897 2 22 .

4 7 )<sup>p</sup> 2 , 1896 12 15 , 「會事記」 The Korean Repository 1896 11 , ' The Corner Stone of Independence Arch ' 458 .

4 8 )The Independent, 1897 12 30 , ' The Review of the Chief Events of 1897 ' .

4 9 )The Korean Repository, 1897 11 , ' The Independence Club '436 .

5 0 )The Korean Repository, 1898 8 , ' The Independence Club '268 .

5 1 )<sup>p</sup> 1897 5 25 , .

52)

가

5.

가 1897 8 8

(通常會)

(debating society)

53)

가

54)

3

(1)

1

(2) 4 1

2

(3)

가

(4)

(5)

1897 8 29

「

」

76

가

55)

2

200

56)

8

(1897 11 1 )

500

57)

가

(public opinion)

(an educational institution)

(the spirit of cohesion),  
views)

(nationalism)

(liberty of

58)

5 2 )<sup>F</sup> 16 , 1897 7 15 , 「會事記」 .

5 3 )<sup>F</sup> 1897 8 8 .

5 4 )<sup>F</sup> 1897 2 4 , 「 」 .

5 5 ) The Independent, 1897 8 31 , ' Local Items ' .

5 6 ) The Independent, 1897 9 16 , ' Here and There ' .

5 7 ) The Korean Repository, 1897 11 , ' The Independence Club '437 .

5 8 ) The Korean Repository, 1898 8 , ' The Independence Club '286 .

34

(親俄)

가

가

가

가

頑冥固陋 閣臣

59)

가

.... 가 가

60)

1897

1898

6.

가

59) 『滯美50』( ) ; 閔泰瑗, 『 』 1947, 91-92 .

60) F. A. McKenzie, The Korea's Fight for Freedom Independence, Club'68 . , ' The

“ 가 가

61)

가 . ’

62)

가

“

가

63)

「

64)

400

65)

가

,

가

가

가

가 66)

‘ (自強) ’

67)

가

가

....

가

가

68)

---

6 1 )<sup>㉑</sup> 1896 5 21 , .  
 6 2 )<sup>㉒</sup> 1897 3 4 , .  
 6 3 )<sup>㉓</sup> 1897 3 30 , .  
 6 4 )<sup>㉔</sup> 1898 4 14 , .  
 6 5 )<sup>㉕</sup> 1897 3 4 , .

---

6 6 )<sup>㉖</sup> 1897 8 10 , .  
 6 7 ) 1897 8 10 , . 6 , 1896 2 15 , .  
 6 8 )<sup>㉗</sup> 1897 8 12 , .



69) ' 史 記( )'

가 가  
(史記)  
가 (大韓史記)  
가

70) (事大) 가

69) 1897 6 8 , 7 31 ,  
70) 1898 3 8 ,

7.

(天賦人權) “  
가

71) , 가 72)

( )

(官人)

가

(進入)

71) 1897 3 9 ,  
72) 1897 2 20 ,

가

73)

75)

『 The Independent  
' the servants of the people '

“ (The officials  
of the Government must realize that they are the servants of the  
people.)<sup>76)</sup>

( - )

( -

) 가

가 가 가

가

가

77)

가

가

가

78)

1894

가 가

73 )<sup>7)</sup> 1898 11 16 , 「 ↓  
74 )<sup>7)</sup> 1898 11 16 , 「 ↓

75 )<sup>7)</sup> 1896 11 21 , .  
76 ) The Independent, 1896 11 21 , ' Editorial'.  
77 )<sup>7)</sup> 1898 1 11 , .  
78 )<sup>7)</sup> 1898 3 3 , 「 」 .

(道)

(外任)

가 ....

(報)

80)

가

가

가

가

가

가

( )

가 79)

가

1896

가

가

(立憲代議君主制)

1898 4 3

79) 1896 4 14

80) 1896 4 16

「 (議會院)

81)

(Charles W. Legendre, 李善得)

(代議) (thoroughly representative government)'

(Consultative

Board) 가

82)

『 』

83)

(1)

(2) 가

8 1 )<sup>F</sup> 1898 4 9 ,  
8 2 )<sup>F</sup> 1898 4 14 ,  
8 3 )<sup>F</sup> 1898 4 30 ,

가

가

(3) 가

가

가

(4) 가

(5) 가

(有助)

(6) 가

(7) 가

가 (相合)

가

(大韓)

1898 5 14

1898 11

( ) ,

85)

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

86)

87)

가

88)

89)

가

90)

(順成會,

85) The Independent, 1896 9 19, 'Editorial' .

86) 1898 1 4 , .

87) 1898 6 16 , 1898 2 12 , .

88) 1898 4 21 , .

89) 1897 2 12 , 3 18 , .

90) 1896 4 21 , 1898 1 4 , .

84) 1896 4 21 , .

贊襄會)

9.

가

<sup>91)</sup>

<sup>92)</sup> 3 1 ( ) , 3 2

<sup>93)</sup>

<sup>94)</sup>

(實相)

<sup>95)</sup>

( )

9 1 )Philip Jaisohn, 'What Korea Needs Most, 'The Korean Repository, 1896 3

9 2 )Philip Jaisohn, 'Korean Finance, 'The Korean Repository, 1896 4

9 3 )<sup>F</sup> 1897 10 9 ,

9 4 )<sup>F</sup> 1897 8 29 ,

9 5 )<sup>F</sup> 1896 5 12 , 9 5 , , 12 3 , , 1897 6 15 ,

50%, 30%, 20%

<sup>96)</sup>

<sup>97)</sup>

가

가

가

(Industrial Revolu-

tion) Revolution )

<sup>98)</sup>

'Industrial

<sup>99)</sup>

가

<sup>100)</sup>

가

9 6 )<sup>F</sup> 1897 6 1 ,

9 7 )<sup>F</sup> 1896 9 9 , 1897 6 12 ,

9 8 )The Independent, 1896 12 29 , 'Editorial

9 9 )Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, 45-46

1 0 0 )<sup>F</sup> 1896 7 25 ,

가  
가

101)

72%가 (山地)

(가 )

102)

가

103)

104)

3 2

가

1 0 1 ㄹ 1897 5 27 , .

1 0 2 ㄹ 1896 8 11 , 1897 6 1 , .

1 0 3 ㄹ 1896 12 10 , .

1 0 4 ㄹ 1897 9 31 , .

가 가

105)

“

”106

107)

108)

109)

110)

111)

19

10.

, 19

112)

1 0 5 ㄹ 1897 8 7 , .

1 0 6 ㄹ 1897 6 1 , .

1 0 7 ㄹ 1896 6 6 , 1898 1 6 , 2 12 , .

1 0 8 ㄹ 1896 5 28 , 12 8 , .

1 0 9 ㄹ 1897 8 26 , .

1 1 0 ㄹ 1897 1 7 , 1896 12 1 , .

1 1 1 ㄹ 1897 5 7 , .

1 1 2 Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays 86-96 .

- (1) 113)
  - (2) 114) 1898 7
  - (3) 115) 가
  - (4) 116)
  - (5) 117) 11. 2
  - (6) 가 118)
  - (7) 119) 가 1898
  - (8) 120)
  - (9) 121)
  - (10) 122) (Alexei de Speyer)
  - (11) 123) 가 (租借) 1898 2 21  
2 24 (Horace N. Allen)
- 124)
- 125)

1 1 3 ㄱ 1896 6 27 , 7 18 ,  
 1 1 4 ㄱ 1896 5 2 , 1897 9 2 ,  
 1 1 5 ㄱ 1896 5 19 , 6 27 , 1897 8 31 ,  
 1 1 6 ㄱ 1897 12 11 ,  
 1 1 7 ㄱ 1897 8 31 ,  
 1 1 8 ㄱ 1896 5 19 , 1897 9 2 ,  
 1 1 9 ㄱ 1896 12 12 , 1897 2 20 ,  
 1 2 0 ㄱ 1897 8 31 ,  
 1 2 1 ㄱ 1898 7 30 , 「 」  
 1 2 2 ㄱ 1896 12 1 ,  
 1 2 3 ) 「 」 『大朝鮮獨立協會會報』 1 , 1896 11 30 , 13-19 2  
 1896 12 15 , 6-9 『 』 1896 10 29 ,

1 2 4 ㄱ 『駐韓美國公使館報告』(Communications to the Secretary of State from U.S. Representatives in Korea: H. N. Allen), 77 , 1898 2 26 , 'Conversation with Russian Representative concerning Supposed Participation of Americans in a Recent Attack on Russian Government'  
 1 2 5 ㄱ 219  
 1 2 6 ㄱ 1896 1 31 『 』 198



127)

12

(趙秉式) 1897

128)

129)

(厚賜)

130)

가

1898

(親俄)

127 頁 219  
128 頁 1897 12 13  
129 頁 218  
130 鄭 喬, 『大韓季年史』, 190

가

가

가

가

(閣臣)

....

가

가

가

가

가

가, 가

가

[秋收] 가

가

131)

가

(

)가

가

132)

133)

1898 4 25

134)

4 30

131) 『滯美50 ( )』閔泰瑗, 『 』所收, 91-92 .  
132) 『 』219 .  
133) 『外部中樞院來去文』(外部編), 第1冊, 光武1年 1 3 「照會第1號」, 1 18 「照覆第3號」, 2 18 「通牒第21號」, 2 24 「通牒第22號」, 4 26 「照會第3號」 .  
134) 『The Independent, 1898 5 3 , 'A Grateful Compliment ' 』 .

( )

135)

5 2

136)

137)

『 』

, 1898 5 14 30

가

138)

1898 5 27

139)

1884

1

, 1898

가

가

가

1 3 5 『大韓季年史』, 188-189 『 』1898 5 5 , 「 』

1 3 6 『民會實記』光武2 3 12 『大韓季年史』, 189 .

1 3 7 『大韓季年史』, 189-190 .

1 3 8 『 』1898 5 14 『 』1898 5 19 , .

1 3 9 『The Korean Repository, 1898 5』, 『Departures』200 .

• •

| |

1.

가 ,

. 19

,  
가

가  
,

가

20  
가  
가  
『 』  
가  
가  
3.1  
가  
가  
가

1)  
가 2)  
3)  
4)  
2.  
1) 『 』 18, 1978, 41-51 .  
2) 『 』 ( : 『 』, 1989), 297-305 .  
3) 『 』 ( 『 』, 『 』 : 『 』, 1990), 18-40 .  
4) 『 』 『 』 『 』 1996, 3 .

8)

가. ‘

가

5)

(開物化民)<sup>6)</sup>

『(易經)』

(擊辭傳)

『(開物成務)』

『(禮記)』

(學記)

1

(化民成俗) ’

가

가

가

가

7)

9)

가

가

가

8) 『 1896 6 30 , .

9) 『 ( ) , 『 ( : , 1993), 119-140 , 『 ( : , 1982), 72-80 .

5) 『 ( : , 1970), 21 .  
6) ( ) · ( ) , 『 ( : , 1981), 175 .  
7) 『 1898 9 23 , ( ) · ( ) , , 174-175 .

가

가 가  
12)

(政變)  
가  
10)

3, 6, 9  
12 (地稅)

가

가

가

가

가

11)

13)

12) 『(甲申日錄)』 14 2 “  
13) 『 』 98 『 : , 1947), 81-82

10) ( ), 『 『 : , 1981), 125-126 .  
11) , , 128 .

가, 가, 가  
14)

가

15)

, 12

가  
가

가 16)

3.

가

가

18)

19)

17) 1896 3 15

18) ( ),  
19) ( ), 72-74

14) ( : , 1985), 122 .

( 1884

1 1 18 , 5 12 , 12 5 6 ).

15) , 7 , 1990, 65-75 .

16) ( : , 1980), 193-195 .

가 7 4 『 』  
 ,  
 ,  
 ,  
 ...  
 ...  
 ...<sup>20)</sup>  
 가 , “  
 가 .  
 ... ”<sup>21)</sup>  
 가  
 가  
 .  
 , 가  
 . 1896 5

2 0 ) 『 』 1896 7 4 ,  
 2 1 ) 『 』 ( : , 1970), 204-250 .

『 』  
 .  
 가  
 ....  
 ...<sup>22)</sup>  
 .  
 1897 1 2 『 (神戸) (The Kobe  
 Chronic)』  
 Independence 가  
 가 ,<sup>23)</sup>  
 5,000 .<sup>24)</sup>  
 ,  
 (K.I.Waeber)  
 (Alexei de Speyer) (K.  
 Alekxiev)  
 가

2 2 ) 『 』 1896 5 16 ,  
 2 3 ) The Independent, August 3, 1897.  
 2 4 ) The Independent, May 2, June 2, 1896.



，  
·

가

國勢

凡百施策

自立

財政權 外人 讓與 가

兵權 外人手中 가

人事

... 齊聲 皇上

三千里 一千五百萬 國民

典章 實踐

他國 依存

權利 自

主 一國 權利 自立

強敵

內

政 (25)

25) 『 』, 22 ; 『獨立協會員等上疏』, 1971, 174-175 . 가

( )· ( ), 233 , 『 ( : , 220 ) .

가

，

26)

『 』

27)

“

가

28)“

” 29)

가

26) , 1896

(總稅務士) 가  
(度支部)

11

가 , 『 』

『 ( : , 1974) , 204 , 『 』

( : , 1987) , 157-161 .

27) 『 ( : , 1999. 12. 28 .

28) 『 1897 12 9 , .

29) 『 1897 10 23 , .

가 . 『 』

30)“

가 ”

“

...  
...

” 31)

가

3

1896 4 7

『 』

32) 『 』

3 0 ) 『 1896 6 4 , .

3 1 ) 『 1896 6 11 , .

3 2 ) 가 ( : , 1990), 160

3 1898 7 1 4  
3 1 . 가 (官  
報)

33)

『 』  
『 』

가

3

3

가

가

34) 『 』

3 3 ) , , 172 .

( , 『 』 『 1991. 가 , 302-303 ).

가 ( , 『 』 『 가 ( : , 1990), 46-66 ).

( , 『 』 『 1996. 3 , 91-93 ).

3 4 ) 『 』

『 』 『 1973, 411 .

가

37)

가 . ,

1898 5

2

35)

가

『 』 ,

『 』

38) 『 』

“

,

.

,

”

.

,

,

『 』

가

39)

,

.

‘

,

’

가

, 가

40)

...36)

가

37)

』

.

‘

’

가

』

』

』

1996 3 . 59-60

38) 『 』 ( : , 1976), 50-51 .

39) D. A. Bunker, ‘ Pai Chai College, ’

The Korean Repository, Vol. , No. 9, September 1896, 361-364 .

40) 가 가 . ,

35) 『 』 , 『 』 39 , 1975 4 , 17 .

36) 『 』 1897 4 7 , .

가

가

41)

1896 6 1 가

42)

4 1 )

, 29-50 .  
 ( , , )  
 가 가  
 , 1  
 ( : , 1937), 209 ; , 『近代朝鮮의變法思想』(東  
 京: 日本評論社, 1973), 155 ; 『 , 1978), 82 ;  
 , 31 .  
 가 ,

4 2 )

,  
 『 ( : , 1976), 89-91 F. A. Mckenzie( ) .  
 ( ), 『 ( : , 1969), 『 ( : ,  
 1974), 295-326 .

가

1896 11

30 『

』

(至治國體)

가

가

(禮樂)

(階

庭)

43)

44)

45)

가

가가

가

4 3 )

, 『 』 1 , 1886 11 30 , 『 』 1967  
 1 , 『 』

4 4 )

“

가

4 5 )

『 ( : , 1975), 5 『  
 ↓ 8 .  
 『 』 1896 7 4 , 『 』 2, 7 .

4.

가  
가

가

가

가

46)

48)

1896

49)

47)

(先行)

48) 80 가 ( 1884 12 5 ),  
14

(參贊會議)

가

가

46) 1986, 69-89, 105

47) 1974, 22-43, 70-71

49) 1970, 102

51

가  
가

.50)

가

가

가

.51)

5 0 ) , 「 ( ) , 『 : , 1986), 60 .  
5 1 ) 『 1896 ,

“ 가

가 ”

가  
가

가 가

가

.52)

가

가  
가

가

.53)

『 1897 4

17 , “

5 2 ) , , 205 .  
5 3 ) , , 82-84 .

... 가 가 ...”

Locke,) (Jean J. Rousseau), (Charles Montesquieu),  
(Thomas Jefferson)

55)

가

“ ”  
56)

가 .  
가 ,  
54)

“ 가 ”  
가 ,

가 “ 가 ”

가 가 ...  
57)

가  
가

가

가 (John

55) Channing Liem, America's Finest Gift To Korea: The Life of Philip Jaisohn (New York: William-Frederick Press, 1952), 50-51 .

56) The Independent, December 5, 1896.

57) 1898 10 16 , .

54) 1896 9 1 , .

58)

‘ 가 가 ’

『 “ (均賦) (人人)  
(共得) (人) (權) (奪) (天) (逆)  
,” 가 (國民治平)  
” 59)

가 『 』 ‘  
, ‘ , ‘ ,  
, ,  
· ,  
『 』 “  
”  
“  
”

60)

58) 『 』 1896 4 21 , .  
59) 『 』 1899 2 17 1900 1 19 ,  
60) 『 』 1896 11 16 , .

,

61)

가 .

『 “ 가

가 ...”

“ 가 ” 가  
“ 가

” 62)

가

61) 『 』 1896 7 11 , .  
62) 『 』 1898 1 11 , .



가

가

가

65)

가

가

“

”

가

, 가“

가

가

가

1, 2

가

” 63)

가

가

“

가

66)

”

64)

5.

가

6 3 )<sup>㉑</sup> 1896 4 14 ,  
6 4 )<sup>㉒</sup> 1896 4 14 ,

6 5 ) , 「 : ( )<sup>㉓</sup> ㉔  
( : , 1986), 144 .  
6 6 )<sup>㉕</sup> 1948 8 29 .

68)

가

가

가

69)

가

70)

가

『

』

71)

가

- 
- 68) 『 』 1896 8 18 , .
  - 69) 『 』 1896 6 11 , 9 29 , 1897 , 5 29 , 6 8 , 8 12 , .
  - 70) 『 』 1896 6 6 , 16 , . 가
- 가
- 
- 『 』 1896 5 19 , 12 12 , .
  - 71) 『 』 1896 8 13 , 12 10 , .

67) 『 』 1898 6 16 , .

『 』  
가 ,

72)

가

가

...73)

가

가

가

...74)

---

7 2 ) , , 21-53 .  
7 3 )<sup>『</sup> 1897 8 31 , .  
7 4 )<sup>『</sup> 1897 1 12 , .

가

가

가

75)

가

가

가

가<sup>『</sup> 』  
“

---

7 5 ) , , 148 .

” 76)

가

가 ...79)

『』

가

“

가

80) ,

, “

가

가

...

”

...

77)

...81)

78)

가

『』

82)

( )

79) 『』 1897 7 24 , .  
80) “

가 가

가

『』

1897 9 24 , ) ,

가

81) 『』 1896 12 22 , .  
82) ‘ ‘ , ‘ ‘ , . 가

1996. 3 , 79 . 『』

76) 『』 1896 4 7 , .  
77) 『』 1896 4 25 , .  
78) , , 25 .

가

83)

“

” 87)

가

84)

“

...

” “

6.

85)

가

19

20

가

가

가

가<sup>ㅁ</sup> ㅁ

86)

가

가

가

83) <sup>ㅁ</sup> 1896 5 12

79

84) <sup>ㅁ</sup> 1922 9 14

85) <sup>ㅁ</sup> 1896 4 30

86) <sup>ㅁ</sup> 1896 4 7

87) <sup>ㅁ</sup> 1898 9 13

, 3·1

3.1

88)

가

『 』

가

89)

『 』  
가 가

가

가 가

가

가

가

가

88)

, 1896 가 『 』  
가

가  
, 42

89) 『 』 1948 9 1



가 . . . . .

2. . . . .

1) , , . . . . .

1864 1 7 ( 1863 11 28 ) 가  
가 . 가  
7  
(金聲根)  
1882 3 22 (別試 文科)  
(甲科) 1 , 3 , 가19  
(呂圭亨),  
(李道宰), (閔宗植) . 2  
『 』 ,  
가  
(戶山)  
(金玉)

均) . . . . .<sup>1)</sup>

[ ]가  
(出) 가  
(不出幾日)  
(戶山) (幾朔) 12  
「가 」  
1883 5 가 (福澤諭  
吉)가 (慶應義塾) 50  
6 가 (稅  
務) 『 』  
.<sup>2)</sup>

3 留學 語學生徒 50 日本 東京  
慶應義塾 . 慶應義塾 西洋 가  
6, 7 , 生徒  
, 1 洋文科  
稅務 , 養蠶法  
, 士官學校 가軍制 ,  
가  
가

1) , 「回顧 甲申政變-徐載弼博士 手記」, 卞榮魯 . 1935.1-2. 2 .  
2) , 1883.12.20, 國內私報, 「駐日生徒」



가  
11 . 14 가  
1884 4 6

3)

4)  
1884 7  
(士官長) . 5 12 4

가 12 13

5)  
가 , 가  
1885 5 25 . 가

6)  
21 .  
가

3 ) , 1884.4.6, 「駐日生徒」  
4 ) , 「回顧 甲申政變 - 徐載弼博士 手記」.  
5 ) Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays(Yonsei University Press),  
1999, pp. 22-23.  
6 ) , 「」, 『』 ( , 1979). pp. 93-149 .

가  
1890 6 7)  
(Philip Jaisohn)  
(Columbian Medical College)

1892  
가 . 1894 6  
(George Buchanan Armstrong) (Murie Josephine  
Armstrong) 8)

. 1894  
가

. 1895 6 2  
2  
1895 12 26  
가 1896 1 1

2)

1896 1  
. 1 15

7 ) , 『』 , 『』 ( , 1984), p. 42.  
8 ) , 『』 , pp. 41-51.

(俞吉濬), - 가 (金嘉鎮) (鄭秉夏)

가 가 , 1

『(The Korean Repository) 3 「 가 (What Korea Needs Most)」

가

9)

14

가

가

가

10)

9 ) Philip Jaisohn, "What Korea Needs Most," Korean Repository, Mar., 1898, pp. 108-110.

가(邦家)

(他道)가

가

“

11)

1896 4 23 ( 8 ) 「 」

식 항

항 는 항

몇 지 항

.....

항 항 항

항

지 는

항 항 는

부

는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

항 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

고 힘 항 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

는 비 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

항 항 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

부 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는 는

11 ) 『 』, 99), , 1972, p. 241.

가

『(漢城新報)』<sup>14)</sup> 4 가 3 가

, 1

1896 3 『』<sup>12)</sup> 가 (九州)

가 (熊本) (熊本國權黨) 가 (紫溟會)

1879 12 (同心學舍) 가

1881 2 가 가

가 가

가 (安達謙藏), (國友重章), 가 (小早川秀雄),<sup>16)</sup>

3) 1 1895 2 17

1 4) 『』 2 16 17 가 『』<sup>14)</sup>

『1895 3 3』 가 2 17 1 가

時事新報, 1895.3.3, 「漢城新報」; 安達謙藏, 『安達謙藏自敘傳』( ; 新樹社), 1960, pp. 47-52; The Korean Repository(Mar.1895, Editorial Department) 2 16

가 16

, 17

1 2) 『What Korea Needs Most』; The Korean Repository, 1896, Mar.

1 3) 『回顧 甲申政變 - 徐載弼博士 手記』.

1 5) 『』 4, ( , 1975), pp. 133-136, 1896 1 28 , 31 , 2 2

1 6) 佐佐博雄, 「熊本國權 と朝鮮における新聞事業」, 『國土館大學文學部人文學會紀

(佐佐木正), (尹敦求)  
 , (平山岩彦)가  
 (牛島英雄)가 .<sup>17)</sup>

1895 10 8  
 가 .<sup>18)</sup> 가  
 , , 48  
<sup>19)</sup>

『 (國民新聞)』  
 (菊池謙讓), (山田烈聖: 『日  
 本新聞』 ), (吉田友吉: 『報知新聞』 ) 가  
 30 가 .<sup>20)</sup>  
 가

300 10 .  
 3  
 가 1 4

17) 安達謙藏, 『安達謙藏自敘傳』, pp. 50-51: 佐佐博雄, 「熊本國・朝鮮における新聞事業」, p. 31.  
 18) 小早川秀雄( ), 『 ( ), 1965); 安達謙藏, 『安達謙藏自敘傳』, pp. 47-52.  
 19) 『 ( ), 1999), pp. 440-453.  
 20) 酒田正敏, 『徳富蘇峰關係文書』 3 (山川出版社, 1987), pp. 220-222.

4 4 ,<sup>21)</sup>  
 3

. 가  
 가  
 가

가

. 가  
 가

가

13 『 漢  
 城旬報』 『 漢城週報』  
 가 가  
 가  
 『 漢城新報』  
 가

,<sup>22)</sup>  
<sup>23)</sup>

---

21) 『 ( ), 1976), pp. 9-17.  
 22) 『 ( ), 1979), pp. 165-171.

3. 『 』

1) 架橋

1896 4 7

300

24)

가

“ 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 ”  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求

2 4 )“ What Korea Needs Most ”; The Korean Repository, 1896, Mar.

가

韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 ”

가 『 』

가

6 30

25)

韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 ..... 韓 人 欲 求  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求  
韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求 韓 人 欲 求

26)

2 5 ) , 1896.6.30, 『 』  
2 6 ) 『 』 , 『 』 , 1979, pp. 111-136 ;  
『 』 , 『 』 , 1979, pp. 152-198  
『 』 , 『 』 , 1976, pp. 1-

2

『<sup>27</sup>』 (李鍾一) 『  
『皇城新聞』

가 가

가

(危害) 가

2) 外勢

1883 10 1888 7

가

가 가

. 1

(秕政) 가

가

“  
황노  
문 힘적

. 1898 7

(果川)

(吉泳洙)가 『』

1899 3

(李

寅榮)

5

(武監)

(蔡奎

夏) (苔刑) 60 1

27)

(大明律)

(誣告律) (反坐律)

27) 鄭晉錫, 『』 ( , 1983), pp. 29-32.

<sup>29)</sup>

가

(協成會)

, 1898 1 1

『

』

,

『

』

<sup>30)</sup>

3)

가 가 가

19

가

‘

(Joseph

Pulitzer) 1883

(New York World)

가 <sup>28)</sup>

2 9 )

21

. 1897

8 31

9.7, 9.16, 9.23, 10.2, 10.23, 10.30, 11.6, 11.13, 11.27, 12.4, 12.11, 12.18, 12.24,  
12.30 『 』

3 0 )

『

』(

, 1983), pp. 198-220 ;

『

』(

, 2001), pp. 27-39.

<sup>28)</sup> Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 31-32.

가 ,  
 .  
 .  
 ,  
 (yellow journalism)  
 . 가 『 』  
 .  
 가 『 (Nation)』  
 , , ,  
 가 ,  
 가<sup>31)</sup>  
 .  
 1897 3  
 . , ,  
 20 가<sup>32)</sup>  
 가

3 1 ) 『 』 『 』 『 』 ( , 1996), p. 67.  
 3 2 ) 『 』 , 1898.9.5, 『 』 『 』

가 가  
 .  
 113 가  
 25, 24, 22 3  
 71 62.9% 가 , , ,  
<sup>33)</sup>  
 가 가  
 『 (The Kobe Chronicle)』  
 가 가  
 가 3 44 가  
 (The Times) 20 ,  
 The Peking and Tientsin Times(14 ) , The Japan  
 Times (13) The Japan Advertiser(12 ) .  
 가  
 『 (New York Herald)』가 4  
<sup>34)</sup>  
 1835 (James Gordon Bonnet)가  
 6 8 , 1

3 3 ) 『 』 100 『 』 ( , 1999), pp. 98-103.  
 3 4 ) 『 』 , 『 』 , pp. 102-103.



가

가

흙 소 는 세 는 가  
흙 ...

가

가

“ 지는 비 가 지는  
백스 스  
가 ”

가

는 는 가 적 은  
흙 못 못 못 못 못  
못 못 못 못 못 못  
...

4)

35)

3 5 )Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 28-29.

36)

The Independent

“... ”

1827 (W.W.Wood) 1827 Canton Register

가 (King, Frank H. H. and Prescott Clarke) 가 A Research Guide to China Coast Newspaper 1822 1911 (晚清西文報紙導要) 가

36 ) , 「 56-70. 37 ) 235 1965 East Asian Research Center

(日本歐字新聞雜誌史) (植原八郎, 東京: 大誠堂) 1934 1861 6 (A.W.Hansard) 가 The Nagasaki Shipping List and Advertiser

38) 가 The Independent 1875 Hongkong Times 303 , 243 . 500 가 가

39) 가 38 ) Lin Yutang, A History of the Press and Public Opinion in China (London: Oxford University Press, 1937), p. 87. 39 ) Frank H. H. King and Prescott Clarke, A Research Guide to China-Coast Newspaper 1822-191 East Asian Research Center Harvard University, 1965, p. 31; Roswell S. Britton, The Chinese Periodical Press 1800 1912 Shanghai: Kelly & Walsh Limited, 1933), p. 49

( )

가1873 (

6)

가 5 468

<sup>40)</sup>

가 (反韓) <sup>41)</sup>

. 1870

450 가

<sup>42)</sup> Tokio Times Kobe Chronicle

300 . Tokio Times 1877

5 6 350 가 가 15

가 . Japan Mail 1870

가 500 가 150

<sup>43)</sup> Tokio Times, Kobe Chronicle, Japan Mail

4 0 ) 原八郎, 『海外邦字新聞雜誌史』(東京: 學而書院, 1936), pp. 81-86.

4 1 ) . FO 371/272, MacDonald가 Grey , 10 July 1907,

No.155; Douglas Story, "Japan in Korea," The Tribune, 4 Sept. 1906.

, 『 ( , 1987), pp. 253-255 .

4 2 ) Grace Fox, Britain and Japan 1858 1883(Oxford at the Clarendon Press, 1969), p.

416.

4 3 ) James Edward Hoare, The Japanese Treaty Ports 1868 1899 p. 312.

가

“ , , (社是)

.” <sup>44)</sup>

5)

가 가

가

가

. 1883

가

가

가 ( 1 ) ,

12 , 1 1 30 <sup>45)</sup>

4 4 ) Editorial, The Independent, Apr., 7th, 1896.

, My Days in Korea, p. 29.

4 5 ) , 1896.4.7, 1 .

가 1 6 (厘) 46) 6 .가  
 20% .가  
 1897 1 2  
 (2 ), 25 , 1 2 60 , 1 5 (5  
 ), 1 75 , 1 6 .  
 2 3  
 2 가

1897 -

	1	6	3	1	1
	2 60	1 40	75	25	2
	6	3 25	1 75	75	5
-	8	4 25	2 35		-

4 6 ) , 1896.10.27, 「 」

가  
 가 22cm, 33cm 4  
 2 , 「 (The Independen-  
 den) 」  
 가  
 가  
 1899 12 4 3 8  
 4,693  
 가 7.2 가  
 3,817 876 4,832  
 가 11 47)

가 (世  
 昌洋行: Edward Meyer & Co.)

(神戸),  
 1886 2 22

1 『 』 가 2 ,  
 『 』  
 가

4 7 ) , 「大韓帝國時代 新聞廣告 一考察」(1989), pp.26-27.

(Tsuji & Co.), 가 (K. Kameya),

가 『 』 『 』 『 』 『 』 『 』 『 』

(1899 6 )

	1	6	1	1 (6 )	1
1 (28 )	40	24	5	1 50	50
(14 )	20	12	3	1	30
7	16	10	2	75	20

The Independent (1897 1 )

	1	6	3	1
1	1	1.10	1.15	1.20
1	10% 가			

가 .48)

4 8 ) ( ) , 「 」

2,444 , 1,100 , 600 , (電報)  
600 , 700 , 200

5,644

62.8%

가

11%

가

가

1886 1

3

가

가

가

. 1897 2 4 3 4

...

가 『  
(The Christian News)』

4.

1) 1 : 1896 ~ 1898

(記名)

』

가

가

2 . 1 1  
1896 1898 2 .

, ,  
.

가

7 . 가

2 , 『 2 ,

3 , The Korean Repository 2 .

- (1) 1896.3. “ What Korea Needs Most ,” The Korean Repository
- (2) 1896.4. “ Korean Finance ;” The Korean Repository
- (3) 1896.11.30: 12.5(2 ) 「 ↓
- (4) 1897.2.15 「 ↓
- (5) 1898.5.4 「 ↓ : 령
- (6) 1898.5.17 「 ↓
- (7) 1898.11.16 ~ 1(2 ) 「 ↓

(1) (2) (3) (4)

『 『 가

가

(1)

가

(5) (6) 가 가

(7)

가

가 .)

- (1) 1896.4.11 「 」 .50)
- (2) 1896.5.23 「 」
- (3) 1897.8.5 「 」
- (4) 1897.6.17 「 」
- (5) 1897.8.31-9.2 「 」

1896 12 1

(1) (2) 가 가 가  
 가 . 「 」 가 . 1896 11 30 『 』  
 가 가 .5 23 「 」 ‘ ’  
 가 가 가 가 1897 6 17 7 24  
 가 가 가 . 16 , 8 31 9 2

(改革主義者)가

가

가

가

가 가

.49)

가

1897 8 5 (3)

, 8 14

2) 2 : 1898

가

가

2

49) 『 - 』 ( , 1984), 53, 240 .

50) 『 『 』 (4) ( , 1989), pp. 7-21.

1898 5 14  
가  
가 (Henry Gerhard Appenzeller)  
(尹致昊)  
가  
가  
가  
1  
720  
600 , 360  
4

5 1 ) , 『 』 ( , 2001), pp. 38-42 .  
5 2 ) , 『 』 ( , 1985), pp. 393-395, 1898. 8.  
17, 가 .  
5 3 ) 『 』 ( , 1975), Feb. 28th, 1898, p. 136.  
5 4 ) , Mar., 3rd, p. 137.  
5 5 ) 1898.5.17, .

1898 5 19  
“ 가 ”  
가  
가  
The Korean Repository  
tory 2  
2  
가  
가  
2

(1) 1920.3.1 『 』  
( )  
(2) 1922.9.14 『 』  
(3) 1924.2.26-2.28 『 』  
(喫緊事) ↓  
(4) 1924.11.23-25. 『 』 3 .  
5 6 ) T.H.Yun, “ An Honest Confession ”, The Independent, May 19th, 1898.



- (5) 1925.1.1<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (6) 1925.1.13-14<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ 2 .
- (7) 1925.10<sup>ㄱ</sup> ㄱ ↓ ㄱ
- (8) 1925.12.14<sup>ㄱ</sup> (賀) ↓
- (9) 1926.9<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓6 (純宗 實記) ↓ ㄱ
- (10) 1927.1.1-3<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ 2 .
- (11) 1927.1.1-2<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ 2 .
- (12) 1927.1.24-26<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ 3 .
- (13) 1932<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ , ㄱ ㄱ ㄱ ,  
1932.
- (14) 1935.1.1-2<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓ ,  
2 .
- (15) 1935.1.3-4<sup>ㄱ</sup> (滯米) ↓ ,  
2 .
- (16) 1948.1.1<sup>ㄱ</sup> (指標) ↓ .

- (1) 1924.2.26-28“ Individualism and Cooperation ”, ( 3
- (2) 1924.3.6“ The First Korean Journalist ” .
- (3) 1924.5.13- 5.17“ Courage and Co-operation ”, 5 .
- (4) 1925.1.1“ Dr. Philip Jaisohn’s Message ”( ㄱ
- (5) 1925.12.13“ To the Editor ”(賀) ㄱ

- (6) 1927.1.1-5“ Let Us Face the New Year with a Smile ”( ㄱ ) 5 .
- (1) 1919. 2.20<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (2) 1919. 5. 1<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (3) 1919. 5.16<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (4) 1919.11.22<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (5) 1919.11.25<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (6) 1920. 1.15; 17<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (7) 1921. 4.18<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (8) 1921. 6.23<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (9) 1921. 8.11<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓
- (10) 1922. 2.23<sup>ㄱ</sup> ↓

The New Korea( )

- (1) 1938.7.7-1940.4.4“ My Days in Korea ”78 .
- (2) 1940.5.23; 5.30; 6.6“ Hidden Wealth of Korea ”(1-3)

1999 가 My Days in Korea and Other Essays(Yonsei University Press, 1999)

5.

57) 가

1)

가

가

1897

「(章典)」가

1

2,1 25,1 2 60 , 1 5  
,1 75 ,1 6

가

”

[取利]

( )

가

(1 ),

12

1 30

1 3 4 5

가

( 3 2 , 3 ).

1 6 (厘)

6

57) , 1896.10.27.



63)

까 가

쑤쑤

쑤

64)

가  
가

( )

가 가

65)

8

가

가

가

가

가

66)

가

(捕捉)

6 3 ) 『 』, 『 』, 1922.9.14.

6 4 ) 『 』, 『 』, 1932, pp. 1-4.

6 5 ) 『 ( ) 』, 『 』, 1927.1.3.

6 6 ) 『 』 『 』 『 新民 』( 6 ), 1925.10.

가  
(購覽)

가 가

가

가

1896 6 2

가

가

가.

67)

6 7 ) 『 』, 1896.6.2.

1925 1 “ (世事) (年

始) (年終) ” (68) 가 “

” (69) 가

” (70) 가

3) 가

400

(8 ), ‘ ; ‘ (32 ), ‘ (4 )

「 」2 1897 4

22 ( 2 48 ) 24 ( 2 49 ) 1 ,

9 25 ( 2 114 ), 28 ( 115 )

가 .

. 1908 2 『 』

1898 9 19 (142 ) 21

(144 ) 「 」

가 ’ 『

』 『 』 32

가

6.

1899 12 4

68 ) 『 』 , 1925.1.19.

69 ) 『 』 , 1922.9.10.

70 ) 『 』 , 『 』



| : |

.  
.  
.

1.

19

, ,

가

가

6.25

1948

1 가

『 』 1896 4 7

『

』

가

『

』

가

-

-

가

『

』

가

2.

가





가 2

.90 가

10

가

1864-1895 -32 ):

1895-18982 -35 ): 『

1898-19365 -73 ):

1936-19573 -88 ):

가

가

『

』

(語文意識)

가

, 『

』

『

』

1891

8

(1972<sup>1)</sup>)

3.

5,000

(1)

. 16

“ 가

.”

(殿試)

(暗講)

(七

通: A+

)

1 ) (1972), 『

』, 142-143

가

1884 6 (士官長) (操鍊局)

“ 가 ? ”

가

15

가

1884 1885

가

. 1884 4

5

6

12 5

(戶山)

가

가

(

(2)

?).

1885 1

가

가

19

가

(3)

(李東仁)

가

1881 (18

가

)

70

가

2

1883 (20 )

1885 (22 ) 4

1885 1887 (Harry Hillman Academy)

가

(1989)

<sup>2)</sup>

. 1887 6

(Eleventh Annual Catalogue

of the Harry Hillman Academy, 1888). 1886 9

2

1888 6

「가

(Eulogy on James A. Garfield)」

2

10

(

The Wilkes-Barre Record, June 16, 1888 ).

3

23

가

2 ) 李光麟(1989), 「

」

」, 玄鐘敏編(1990) 『

가

가 . 1989 6 2 ,

「

」

<sup>3)</sup>

1

FR, GE

.( )

(4)

70

1

가

(古典文語)

3 ) (1989), 「

」, 玄鐘敏編(1990), 122 .

4. 『 』

20

(1) 1

가

가

?

가

(母語)가

,  
가

가

?

(開明)

22

?

3

33

가

1

Philip Jaisohn

10

1886

『 』

1886 1 1

4 7 『 』

『 』

1



『 』 1 1 3 . 1

2 3

가

(

1'

'

2' ). 1 2

1

가

2

가

1 2

, 1 『

』

2 1

가

가

『

』

1896

가

『

』

『

』

1

1

1

2

'

,

'

,

가 ,

2

,

(2)

가

가

가

가

1

2가

1

'



가1938 9

(校補員)

가

1

2

1

2

가

2

가

가

1

2가

2

가.

가

가 가

『

』

1

2

33

『

』

1

가

1896 4 7 ,

,

『

』

가

21

,

9 (1905 )

가

5

(同式會)

『

』

가

11 (1907 )

가

2

가

2

2

가

1

2

가?

가

가

가

『

』

1

2

『

』

『

』

가

가



6)

가

( ) 1910 6 (普中親睦會報) 1  
( )

가 1909 2

『 』 ( )

1907 「

스」 가

가

( ) 가 ( )

( ) 1910

( ) 1906

(가) 吾地球가成體 後 其上 不動物 動物 生

( ) 國文 名稱 發音 研究 一事가 스 國文

訓民正音, 諺文, 反切, 國文, 四名 有

( ) 天下文字가二種 有 一 記音文字 一 記事文字

( ) , , , ,

( ) 가, , , ,

( ) ㅅ 가

( ) 宇宙自然 理 地球가成 其面 水陸 分

( ) 此書余自昨冬以至今日口授於學生但爲若干便宜

(가) 1907 4 「尙必自國文言」

, ( ) 1907 1908

( ) 1909 3

가

가

가

가

가

가

6) 李賢熙(1988), 『 』 譯註, 『周時經學報』 1, (1988) 199-211

李賢熙 『 』 譯註

『 』 文字論 周時經 培材學堂 萬國歷史地誌 特別科

1887 『 』

『 』 2 47 (1897 4 22 24 ) 文字論

2 114 115 (1897 9 25 28 ) 運用

法 ( , 意譯 , 書法 )

( )









5.

가  
가

( )  
 )<sup>9)</sup> ( )  
 ) ?  
 가 .  
 1  
 『 』 가  
 『 』 ( )  
 『 』  
 『 』  
 1896

, 가

가  
 가  
 가 가  
 가 (公敵)

가

9) (1989) (1990) (1989)  
 (1990) 『周時經學報』4 (7-21) ,  
 玄鐘敏 編 『 (46-66) 』

가

( )

가.가

10)

5 가 19

1880

. 1896 6 20 『 가 』  
7 2 가

7

( )

4

1897 11 20

1 5

가  
가

가

가 19

10)拙稿(1990),「

正書法」, 崇實史學 6, 192-193

1880  
(外邦宣教會)  
가  
1880  
가

가

가

가

6.

(1960) 『 (新聞史)』 『  
가

『 』

(講述形) .

11)

- 卷 :

- :

1 1 ) 拙稿(1992), 『 (拙著(1999), 『國語文 集文堂, 103-124 』13 , )



- 공 :  
- 공 :  
- 공 :

가 . ‘ ’

(1989)

‘ - 공 ’

‘ - 공 ’

‘ ,  
가

가 .

가 .

가

가

1

( / .

)

가 가  
가

(agenda setting)

.<sup>1)</sup>

| : |

가

(cultivation effects) .<sup>2)</sup>

가

1883

1.

가 가

가

1896

가

1) , 『 』 2 ( , 2000), 303-305 .  
2) , 416-425 .

『 』

가

가

가

가

『 』

3)

1876

가

가

가

『

』

』

』

『

』

1)

1882

2.

가

가

가

가

3) 『 』 ( 『 』, 1984), 9-30 , 『 』, 1984), 176-182 .

4)

가

5)

가

가

2)

가

4) 『 80 』( , 1967), 41-46 .

5) 『 , 『 가 』 11 ( , 1994), 3-4 .

『 』

가

, 1884 8 14 「

14

가 “

5

가

가 ”

6)

가

가 가

1888 1

7)

가

6

(有妻娶妾)

6) 『 』 1884 8 31 , 『 ( , 1983),

626-627 .

7) 『 『 』 21 , 106.

가

『 』 . 1,000

가

가

10)

8)

『 』

3)

9)

가

가

1894

가

가 가

가

10

가

1896 2

(俄館

3

播遷)

5

20

16

6

(寡女)

3

가

8) 가 6 1894 7

某氏

( , 1993), 134 .

9) 『 』 ( , 1971), 407-417 427-431 .

2

1885 1892

『 』 1887 1889 1895 4

『 』 ( , 1992), 129-132 .

10) , , 131 .

가 .<sup>11)</sup> 5 10 2, 3

. 6

1895

, 2

,  
1908

1909

가

.<sup>12)</sup>

3.

1 1 ) , 「 .  
(1999), 239-240 .

1 2 ) , 「 .  
31 .

, 1883

『 』

『 가

. 『 』

가

.<sup>13)</sup> 『 』 3,000

.<sup>14)</sup> 『 가

, 1886 『 가

가 ,

가

『 』

1 3 ) , 「 .  
『 』 20 (

1 4 ) , 『 , 2000),  
『 ( , 1990), 90-98 .







가

....

....<sup>27)</sup>

가

<sup>28)</sup>가

(宗法)

가

(奉祭祀)가

가

가

17

<sup>29)</sup>

18

<sup>30)</sup> 『

』

<sup>31)</sup>

27) 『 1896 4 21 , .

28) 가 (夫君)

가

』 ( , 1993), 62 , 『

』<sup>27)</sup> 21 』

( , 1994), 110 .

29) 『 가 』 ( , 1986), 551-553, 570 669 .

30) “ . E. Bishop, , 394 .

,

(內外法)

<sup>32)</sup>

10

<sup>33)</sup>

『 』

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

....<sup>34)</sup>

31) 『 1898 2 12 , .

32) 『 (小學) 』 “女子十年不出”(立教編), “男

女七世不同席”(立教編), “

(男不言內 女不言外)”(明倫編)

가 , 『小學』 ( , 1982).

33) 가 , “

가 ,

가

394 .

『

. E. Bishop, ,

가

가

35) 『

“

” 36) 『

37)

38)

가

가

가

가

가

2)

(1)

『 가 가

가 가

39) 『

가

가

40)

가

---

35) 『 1899 4 27 , .

36) 『 1896 4 7 , .

37) 『 1896 9 5 , .

38) 『 1896 4 21 , .

---

39) 『 1898 2 12 , .

40) 『 1896 6 6 , .

20, 30 가 ,<sup>41)</sup>  
가 ,  
42)

가 가 .  
가 ,  
가 『 』 가

가 ,  
가 가 ,  
가 가

가 ,  
가<sup>46)</sup> 가 ,

10 가<sup>43)</sup>  
가 .  
가 .

가<sup>47)</sup>  
가 ,  
가 .

44) 가  
45)

가 가 ,  
가 .

4 1 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1896 6 6 .  
4 2 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1898 2 12 , .  
4 3 ) , 『 』<sup>㉞</sup> 15 , 1994, 90-91 .  
4 4 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1898 2 12 , .  
4 5 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1899 6 20 , 『 』 ( ) .

4 6 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1896 6 6 , .  
4 7 )<sup>㉞</sup> 1896 4 21 , .

가  
가 가  
가 가 가  
48)

.가

51)

가

가

가

, 17

49)

가

. 『 』

가

...

가

(烈行) 가

가 50)

가

(2)

『 』 가

52)

48) .  
49) 가 15 가  
孫) 文, 武科, 生員, 進士科  
條, , 95 )

가  
(庶孳子  
. 『經國大典』 券3 禮典 諸科  
가 가

가  
50) 『 』 1896 10 31 , .

, 『 』

51) 『 』 1896 6 6 , .

52) 『 』 1896 6 16 , .

3)

『 』 , ,

53) 가

54) 가

55)

(1)

『 』 가 . 가

가

, 가

가 .

57)

(三從之道)가<sup>58)</sup>

, (敬順忍從)

가 . , (節婦)

가

59) 가

(烈節) 가

『 』

가 ,

“

56) 『 』 1896 9 5 . 1897 5 18 , .  
57) 『 』 1899 5 26 , 『 』 1897 12 31

58) 가 가 , 가 , 가

59) 『 』 1898 1 4 , 『 』 (『禮記』喪服編)  
『 』 11 ( 『 』 , 1981), 40-54 .





1898 9 1

「<sup>69)</sup>  
가

가

1898 10

<sup>70)</sup>

가

1899

1903

<sup>71)</sup>

, 1899 5

<sup>72)</sup>

가

1898 8

69) 『 』 1898 9 9 , 「  
70) , 75-78 .  
71) , 64-73 .  
72) , 35 .

<sup>73)</sup>

<sup>74)</sup> 『

』 1899 4

12 『

』, 1907

『 』 가

『 』

가

『 』

, 『

』

』  
<sup>75)</sup>

1910

가

『

』 가

가

<sup>76)</sup> 『

』

1907

10

, 가

『

』

73) 『默菴備忘錄』 16 , 1898 1 10 .

74) 『 』, 1898 4 29 11 1 .

75) 『 』, 7 『 』 『 』 『 』  
『 』 『 』 1907 9 25 , 「

76) 『大韓每日申報』 1908 8 20 , 「帝國新聞贊成會趣旨書」



6.

『 』 가  
18

1894

가 , 가  
가

10 , 가,

가 ,

『 』 가  
『 』 가

, 가 ,

『 』

가 가

가

『 』

가

『 』

가가

가

77)

『 』

가

가

77) 『 』 100 『 』 10 (1995), 101 102 .

가

78)

가

가

가

가

79)

78) 1899 5 31, 「가」 ( ).

79) 3, 「가」 ( )

1989), 49-53 .

가

가

80)

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

81)

가

가

80) 「가」 2, 「가」 ( )

, 1993), .

81) 「가」 14 (1996), 45-55 .

3 · 1

(新大韓)



3 · 1

(新大韓)

(方略)

1919 3 · 1 4 13  
가 . 4 14 ( )  
‘ { : The First Korean  
Congress; ‘ , ‘ , )가 . 4 16  
. . . . .  
가 .  
가  
. 3 · 1

1919 9

1945

가

( ) ( ), ( ), ( ), 1 ( ), 1 ( ) .1)

1) 金秉祚, 『獨立運動史略(上篇)』(1920年序, : , 1927), p. 88; 『 (Reedley, Cal.: Warren Y. Kim/Charles Ho Kim, 1959), p. 372; 金源模, 『在美韓人會議錄 公開』, 『月刊朝鮮』1985.3( 60 ), p. 198; 『 : ( : , 1984), pp. 95-99 『 : , 1986), pp. 80-81; 元聖玉, 『First Korean Congress: : , 1986); 『( ) 1 『 : , 1988), p. 506; 申載洪, 『大韓民國臨時政府 歐美 關係』, 『韓國史論』10(1981), p. 314; 高珽然, 『大韓民國 臨時政府 歐美委員部(1919~1920研究』, 高麗大學校 大學院 史學科 博士學位論文, 1991), pp. 44-48; 『 『 1991 가 , p. 305; 李愚振, 『在美活動』, 『 : , 1993), pp. 273-274; 李炫熙, 『柳一韓 獨立運動研究』( : , 1995), pp. 77-78; 『 : ( : , 1997). pp. 127-129. 『 1919 4 3 『 가5 6 (大韓獨立 血戰記)』( : , 1919.8.15), pp. 15, 27 『 , Warren Y. Kim John K. Hyun 『 Liberty Conference ( ) . Warren Y. Kim, Koreans in America (Seoul: Po Chin Chai Printing Co. Ltd., 1971), p. 122; John K. Hyun, A Condensed History of the Kungminhoe: The Korean National Association (1903~1945) (Seoul: The Korean Cultural Research Center, Korea

3

가

3·1

(新大韓)

(閣員)

가

3·1

가

가

1919 4

가 가

가

—1920

3·1

3·1

『

대한민국 ( : First Korean Congress)

1920 (公翰)

( ) (1894)

가 4)

1. 1919

60

(Korea fever)<sup>5)</sup>

(徐載弼, Philip Jaisohn, 1864~1951) 19

20 ( ) 18

( ) 1 2

21 (兵曹參判兼正領官)

2 2) ' 3 '

가 (滅門之禍)

' (流竄) ' 3) 1885 4

1 가 9

D.C.

1892

(M.D.)

(1886)

(1888)

가 1895 12 1898 5

(外臣)

(中樞院)

(校典所) ( 3 )

(培材學堂)

, 『 』

, 『 』

가

10

4) 1938

(unsophisticated) 가

. Philip Jaisohn, "My Days in Korea" (August 25, 1938), My Days in Korea and Other Essays, ed. Sun-pyo Hong (Seoul: Yonsei University Press, 1999), pp. 21-22;

; 『 』 pp. 200-201

5) 『 』 p. 266

2) 金玉均, 『甲申日錄』, 1884 12 4 . 2

. 申福龍, 『

』, 『 』, 1993), pp. 195-196

3) 『 』 6 『純宗實記』, 『 』 1926 9 , 『 』 ;

』, 1996), p. 162.

1897 3  
 1898 5  
 7 10  
 『 』 가  
 가  
 3<sup>6)</sup>  
 (軍醫) 가 1905  
 —  
 1914 (市)  
 (彫版物) (Philip Jaisohn & Co.) 50  
 (Business Association of Philadelphia) (treasurer)  
 (有志)가<sup>7)</sup>  
 가 가  
 가가 가

6) 『尹致昊 日記』( : , 1975), 5, pp. 152-153(1898.4.22)), 159(1898.5.11), 1899.12.31); 李光麟, 『韓國開化思想研究』( : , 1979), pp. 188, 195; 『 』 pp. 303-304 .

7) 『 (滯美) 50 』玄鐘敏, 『徐載弼 韓國民主主義』( : , 1990), pp. 139-140; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn (Seoul: Kyujang Publishing Co., 1984), pp. 218-219; 『 』 p. 271 .

1<sup>8)</sup> 1919 3  
 , 3·1  
 1919 4 1922 2 3  
 , 1919 4 14~16  
 (The Bureau of Information for the Republic of Korea) (director)  
 『 』(Korea Review)  
 (The League of the Friends of Korea) 19  
 가 1919 8  
 D.C. (歐美委員部: The Korean Commission to America and Europe)  
 가  
 , 1921 11 1922 2  
 (The Washington Disarmament Conference: )

8) 가가 , 田鳳德, 「徐載弼 法思想」, 『韓國近代法思想史』( : , 1981), p. 265; 『 』 pp. 263-264 .

( ) (Charles E. Hughes)

(長書)

.<sup>10)</sup>

1919 3 9 3 .

가

1

<sup>11)</sup>

가3 . 1

.<sup>9)</sup>

1905

7

(李承晩) · (尹炳求)가

(Theodore

2.

Roosevelt)

『

』

(金道泰)

가

.<sup>12)</sup>

3 . 1

1913

.(

1919 3 1

[sid

....

1 0 ) 金道泰, 『徐載弼博士自敘傳』( : , 1948), pp. 249-250. (林昌榮:

Channing Liem) ( )

『 (The Evening Ledger, )

[George G.

Benedict]

[James S. Gale]

1896 ~ 1898 가[ ]

(自由愛: love of freedom)

가

. "Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 220-221.

1 1 )

(未刊)

(『 Log Book of S.R. 』)

, 3 10

3 . 1

3 9

1 2 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 216-217; 『

』( :

, 1996), p. 42 .

9 ) 1919 ~ 1922

77-119;

『

』 pp. 271-288;

『

』

』 pp.

pp. 127-206;

『

』 1921 ~ 1922

』

『

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

』

가  
『 』  
1918 12 19  
Association)

)<sup>13)</sup>  
(大韓人國民會: The Korean National Association)  
(安昌浩)

가 2 5  
가  
가  
.....<sup>14)</sup>(  
가 . .)

가 가  
가  
가  
.....  
가  
,

, 1  
(鄭翰景)  
,  
15)

[sid

가

1 4 )<sup>□</sup> 1918 2 20 ( 524 ),<sup>□</sup>  
1 5 )<sup>□</sup> 1919 3 13 , 3 13

가

가 가 (徐君)  
(弟)  
가 (恨) . ( 가  
( )  
,<sup>□</sup> (梨花莊所藏)

가  
50 가

雲南 李承晩 文書: 東文篇』( 1918 12 17 , pp. 235-238.

1 3 ) ,<sup>□</sup> 『 : , 1996), p. 104

7가 가 3 15  
(a Korean



1919 2 5

D.C. . 16)

(張澤相) · (閔奎植)<sup>17)</sup>

( ) (“ Log Book of

S.R.) , 2 5

Information Office)

. Warren Y. Kim, Koreans in

Americapp. 120-121; 申載洪, 「大韓民國 臨時政府 對美外交」<sup>18)</sup>

, 100 頁( ), 1982), p. 274.

1 6 ) 14 (1905) 가 (州)

(Kearney) (Hastings)

(Lincoln)

1917 , 1918 1918 ~ 1921

(Northwestern University) (American University)

(fellow) 1918 5 頁

「The Chinese Students ' Monthly 」 「 Korea and Japan) (文才)가 3·1

Korean Treaties (1919), The Oriental Policy of the United States (1919), The Case of Korea (1921), The Russians Came to Korea (1947)

“ The Americans Came to Korea ” (遺稿)

Korea and the United States Through War and Peace, 1943-1960 . Young Ick Lew( ),

“ Foreword”, Henry Chung, Korea and the United States Through War and Peace, 1943-1960(Seoul: Yonsei University Press, 2000), pp.xiii-xiv .

, 「 , 3·1 」 , 「3·1

運動 50周年 紀念論集」( : , 1969), pp. 517-520; 「1910

韓人 動向 大韓人國民會 活動」<sup>19)</sup> 8(1994), pp.

173-175 .

1 7 ) 張炳惠, 『滄浪 張澤相 一代記: 常綠

自由魂」( : , 1992), pp. 61-62 . 1919 8

「 」 .

1919 2 3 , 2 5 , 2 12 , 3

22 ~ 23 , 2 5 , 3 8 , 3

9 , 3 12 , 3 13 , 3 17 , 3 18 , 3 22 ~ 23 , 3 29 ~ 30 , 6 22

, 6 26 . “ Log Book of S.R. ” .

2 5 :

. [

] [sid (閔泳徽)

(閔奎植)

50

. [ ]

20

10

50

] (編輯副責)

. [ ]

(food's errand)

. [ ]

.<sup>18)</sup>

가 ‘ ,

50

1 8 ) “ Log Book of S.R. ” 1919 2 5 .

‘ 2 13

1919 4 15 [sid

.20)

(a Korean Convention)

[ ] (The Independence Hall) 가

.19) (逆) 3·1

가

1949 ( )

(Robert T. Oliver) (가 )

3·1

1919 20

가

가

19) “Feb. 13: During this time I proposed to hold a Korean Convention in Philadelphia and a parade to the Independence Hall. Circulars were sent out to that effect signed by Jaisohn and myself. (See the Report on Korean Congress).”

85

가 .21)

3·1

1919 4 14

가

가 .22)

20) 가

“ I am sending you a copy of my impressions of Dr. Rhee. I hope it will be of some help to you in writing his biography. ”

가

가 (假題)

21) 가 (自傳的)

pp. 297-307

가

22) “... ( )”

가

林炳稷, 『林炳稷回顧錄』

, 1964), p. 115.

Dae-Sook Suh, ed., tr. The Writings of Henry Cu Kim: Commentaries on Syngman Rhee, Pak Yōng-man, and Chong Sun-man (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press and Center for Korean Studies, University of Hawaii, 1987), p. 114.

“Historical Account of K. Prov. Gov. [Korean Provisional Government]” “In America, Dr. Rhee called a Korean Convention to meet in Philadelphia in the middle of March...The convention marched to Independence Hall where the Declaration of Independence was read and signed by Dr. Rhee on the chair where George Washington sat when he signed the American Declaration of Independence nearly a century and a half before.”

가

3.

가

가?

3 3 24 『 』

[ ]'

[sid

1537 Chestnut St., Philadelphia, Va.

1919 3 24

23)

가 가.

[水火]

가

4 14 16

[城]

가

3·1

[sid

, 3·1

가

[等節]

가

, ' 가

(共和政

가

23)『 』 1919 4 3 ( 534 ), p. 3.

가

體) , 가

(李大爲) 3 가 ....<sup>25)</sup>

1919 4 14 16

가

가

가

]

가 가

[ ]

1774 ~ 1775

가

(The Continental Congress)

<sup>24)</sup> , 1919

(The First Korean Congress)

4 14 16

— 1

가 4 1

가

가 3

가 가

4. 가

(昌浩)가 (進參)

가

가

(閔燦鎬) · (尹炳圭: siq ·

『 ( 『 ) ,

2 4 ) 1910 3 가 , 『 p. 69

1918 11 25

12 2

『 pp. 33-35 1919 4 가

2 5 ) , 1919.4.1. 『 17 , pp. 239-240.

2 6 ) First Korean Congress (Philadelphia, 1919: FKC ), p. 40;

『 p. 200.

11 (州),  
(準州: Territory of Hawaii)

150 (delegate) 가  
가  
가? 가  
(委員)

30 .<sup>29)</sup>

가 가  
—가 — ( ), (金鉉九), (閔燦鎬),  
(柳一韓), (尹炳求), (李大爲),  
(林炳稷), (林超), (張澤相), (鄭翰景),  
(趙炳玉), (千世憲) 14 가

11 < 1> .

27) FKCC, p. 18

28) 4 17 ; ,  
pp. 16, 19. 「 」  
가 250 , p. 251.

29) 가 ( ): Kiyham Chang, Henry Chang, Y. P. Chung, K. S. Deyo, Paihyuk [sic] Kim, "Mr. Im," Charles F. Lee, Charles L. Lee, R. K. Lee, Y. C. Lee, Samuel Lee, Wonnick Leigh, D. W. Lim, Y. N. Park, Taikwon Sur, Miss Joan Woo, A. K. Yim( 17 ).  
1919 5 13 「 」  
李春昊, 尹永善, 盧政敏, 申聲求,  
李容稷, 姜永大, 金永基  
p. 49, fn. 74.

< 1> 가 ( )

( )	(1919 )	( )	1919 ( )		
(Philip Jaisohn)	1864 ~ 1951 (55)	1885	( ) (M.D)		
(Syngman Rhee)	1875 ~ 1965 (44)	1904	( . )	"	
(C. H. Min)	1877 ~ 1954 (42)	1905	가 (USC) ( )	"	( )
(P. K. Yoon)	1879 ~ 1949 (42)	1903		"	( )
(Henry Kim)*	1889 ~ 1967 (30)	1910	( . )	"	( )
(Henry Chung)	1890 ~ 1985 (29)	1905	( )	"	( )
(B. C. Lyhm)*	1893 ~ 1976 (26)	1913		"	

(T. S. Chang)	1893 ~ 1969 (26)	(1911)	( ) ; ( ) ( )	?	,
(P. O. Cho)	1894 ~ 1960 (25)	1914	,	"	,
(Ilhan New)	1895 ~ 1971 (24)	1905	( . )	"	,
(Nodie Dora Kim)	1898 ~ 1972 (21)	1905	( . )	"	,

< >: 『 』 國家報勳處, 『大韓民國 獨立有功者 功勳錄』( : 가, 1980; 方善柱, 『在美韓人 獨立運動』( : , 1989); 『, 『 : , 1996); 柳一韓傳記編纂委員會, 『企業人 柳一韓』( : , 1995); 李炫熙, 『柳一韓 獨立運動 研究』( : , 1995); 林炳稷, 『林炳稷 回顧錄』( : , 1964); 張炳惠, 『滄浪 張澤相 一代記: 常綠 自由魂』( : , 1992); 趙炳玉, 『趙炳玉: 回顧錄』( : , 1986); 洪善杓, 『在美韓族聯合委員會研究(1941-1945)』(2001); J. Earnest Fisher, *Pioneers of Modern Korea*(Seoul: The Christian Literature Society of Korea, 1977); Young Ick Lew, "Foreword", Henry Chung, *Korea and the United States Through War and Peace, 1943-1960* (Seoul: Yonsei University Press, 2000); Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn (Seoul: Kyujang Publishing Co., 1984); Barbara Bennett Peterson, ed., *Notable Women of Hawaii* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 1984); Dae-Sook Suh, ed. and tr., *The Writings of Henry Cu Kim* (Honolulu: Center for Korean Studies, University of Hawaii, 1987); www.koreacentennial.org/methmin.pdf.

\*

< 1> 가 ( ) 가 (B.A.) 가 가 ( . ) 가 (師事) (私淑) 가 1 가 1919 가 가 ( . . ) 가 가 —4 1 30)

3 0 ) 3 28 4 14 . The Institute for Modern Korean Studies (IMKS), ed., *The Syngman Rhee Telegrams* (Seoul: JoongAng Ilbo and the Institute for Modern Korean Studies, Yonsei University, 2000), I, p. 52. 가 4 10

가 (興土團: The Young Korean Academy)  
 (白一圭) (白樂濬)  
 가<sup>31)</sup> 1915  
 (武鬪派)  
 (朴容萬, 1881~1928) 1918 11  
 (新韓會: The New Korea Association)  
 (金憲植, 1869~1951)<sup>32)</sup> 1919  
 7 541  
<sup>33)</sup>  
 가  
 [ ] 가  
 (親)  
 『 Henry Kim Kyiham Chang (金顯哲)

(調) . ( Ahn Changho passed through Honolulu on his way to Shanghai. He left Cal. without notice. ) " Log Book of S.R., "April 10, 1919.  
 3 1 ) IMKS, ed., The Syngman Rhee Telegrams, I, pp. 101, 119 .  
 , 尹炳奭, 『  
 民族運動 思潮』( : , 1996), p. 550 .  
 3 2 ) 3 · 1 . 方善柱, 『3 · 1  
 ↓ , 『, 1988), 3, pp.  
 484-498; 『在美韓人 獨立運動』( : 文化研究所, 1989), pp.  
 303-324 .  
 3 3 ) Warren Y. Kim, Koreans in America, p. 23; John K. Hyun, A Condensed  
 History p. 11. , 『 p. 158, p. 159, fns. 35, 36 .

(張基永) 가  
 가 . ' 2 6  
 — . . 2 4  
 (鳩首)  
 가 가<sup>34)</sup> , 1919  
 3 · 1  
 가 . 『  
 가 ,  
 ' [ ] (有姓名) 가(宗教大家)'  
 (Rector of Holy Trinity Church)

(Dr. Floyd W. Tomkins),  
 (Villanova College) (Rev. Father James J. Dean),  
 가 (rabbi) (Dr.  
 Henry Berkowitz), (Lansdowne)  
 (Rector of St. John's Church) (Rev.  
 3 4 ) FKC, pp. 36, 44 Mr. Chang p. 43  
 ' Mr. Min ' ' Rev. Min ( ) 가





< 2 >

1 (4 14 )

:  
 ,  
 - Kiyham Chang  
 - (起草)  
 ( : ):  
 ( : ):  
 · Rev. Charles L. Lee · Mr. Y. N. Park  
 ( : ):  
 · Miss Joan Woo  
 ( : ):  
 ( : ):  
 · Dr. Charles L. Lee ·  
 (ex officio)  
 - (金奎植) 4 11  
 -  
 - (Herbert A. Miller)  
 - (Alfred J. G. Schadt)  
 :  
 - 「 」

36)FKC, p. 8.

- ( )  
 - 「 」  
 - (Samuel Lee) 가  
 - 「 」 ;  
  
 2 ( 4 15 )  
 :  
 - (Rev. Father James J. Dean) ( 53 ),  
  
 - K. S. Deyo  
 - ; :  
 3  
 - 「 」 .  
 - 「 」 .  
 :  
 - ‘ ’ (申獻民)  
 - ‘ ’ ,  
 ( . ) : . . . .  
 , (ex officio)  
  
 3 ( 4 16 )  
 :  
 - (Henry Berkowitz)  
 - (Samuel G. Lee)  
 -

- R. K. Lee 가  
 - (George Benedict)  
 - (Croswell McBee)  
 - ( ) (The Federation of Churches)  
  
 - 「 」  
 - (The Executive Council of the Korean National Association) (an information bureau)  
 ; ‘ ’ ,  
  
 - Mrs. Caroline Kennedy O'Neill (弔電)  
 ; 3  
 - , , 가  
  
 - 1919 4 16 『Philadelphia Record』  
 「 『Korean Independence』  
 - (Reimer)  
 - (McCartney)  
 - Mr. D. W. Lim, ;  
  
 -  
 - ,  
 가 ‘ ’ ,  
 ,

37)

(金奎植)

(高麗僑民親睦會: Korean Municipality of Shanghai)

(Hun Min Sinn, 申獻民, : 申錫雨)<sup>38)</sup>

가 가

『(The Philadelphia Record)

『(Korean Independence)』

가

(Thomas Smith)

[ ]

(崔南善)

3

37) 가

p. 135

38) (申錫雨, 1894~1953) 가

趙東杰, 『臨時政府 樹立 1917

『大同團結宣言』, 『韓國學論叢』 7(1987) pp. 132-133, 145

, 潘炳律, 『大韓國民議會 上海 臨時政府 統合政府

樹立運動』, 『韓國學論叢』 2(1988. 3), p. 96; 李炫熙, 『大韓民國臨時政府史

研究』( : , 2001), pp. 120, 165, 224, 438, 415-416

{Liberty Bell)

1787

(George Washington)

39)

3

가

4 15

4

(Secretary of State)

40)

4 16

20

[ ]

(烈火)

5

39)

『(間紙)』, pp.

. FKC, p. 56-57

136-137

40) FKC, p. 54.

....<sup>41)</sup>

—가

42) 가 (起草) . 「 [ ] 」

가

, 1922 가 1919 가

—1950 —

. , 1922 2 6

43)

44)

『 』 (知悉)

4 1 )FKC, p. 71.

4 2 ) 『 (1899 ~ 1904) 』( : , 2002), pp. 164-165 宋建鎬, 『徐載弼 李承晩』( : , 1980), pp. 19, 26, 120 .

4 3 )FKC, pp. 30-31.

4 4 ) 『 pp. 29, 64-65, 68, 74, 94, 95-98, 103-104, 106, 110-112, 126; 『 pp. 83-84; 『 pp. 277-281 .

... [ ] 가

[ ] (The Korean cause)

[ ]

45)

1922

, 1942 2 ~ 3

(The Korean Liberty Conference)

가 46) ‘ ’

4 5 ) Philip Jaisohn Syngman Rhee, February 6, 1922.

4 6 ) [Syngman Rhee, ed.,] Korea Liberty Conference (Los Angeles and Honolulu: The United Korea Committee in America, 1942), pp. 65-71, 99-100 .

가 [ ]

가

가 [ ]

가<sup>47)</sup>

1940

1949 「 」

가

가

[ ] 가

가 가 [ ]

---

47) 『 』 1942 7 23 , 「 」

가 [ ]

가

가

[ ]

가 (I think

Dr. Rhee is one of the outstanding figures in Korean history.)

[ ]<sup>48)</sup>

---

48) 『 』 20 「 」

(William F. Dean)

“ ” 「 」 『 』 pp. 188-189.

가

Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 297.

가 가 가

가 ‘ ’ 가  
가 가  
가

6.

가 4 17  
( : 金仲文)  
(白一圭),  
(李鍾寬)  
( )

[ ] .<sup>49)</sup>

150 가 ,  
‘ ’ 가  
‘ ’

가4 16  
[ ]

(Episcopal) ,

(遺稿) 「  
(“ Americans Came to Korea ”) 가

가 .<sup>50)</sup>  
“ 가 (親韓)  
”

; , ,  
[ ] ; ,

‘ ’ 가 .<sup>51)</sup> 가

[ ] ; ,  
;

4 9 )IMKS, ed., The Syngman Rhee Telegrams, I, pp. 135, 136, 137.

5 0 ) Henry Chung, Korea and the United States Through War and Peace, 1943-1960 (Seoul: Yonsei University Press, 2000), p. 81.

5 1 ) Ben C. Limb, “ Syngman Rhee - the Man, (1943 ) , pp. 5-6.

가

가  
 가  
 가  
 (Nodie Dora Kim)  
 가  
 D. W. Lim Y.  
 C. Lee · Taikwon Sur ·  
 가 ( , , )

52)  
 가  
 가  
 (resolution)  
 가 (起草)

「 (Message to  
 the Provisional Government of the Republic of Korea), 「 [ ]  
 「(An Appeal to America), 「  
 (Aims and Aspirations of the Koreans), 「

5 2 ) FKQ pp., 17-18, 23, 79 .

[ ](To the Thinking People of Japan), 「  
 「(Petition to the President of the  
 United States and the Peace Conference in Paris) 가

3 · 1 가  
 가  
 가 가 ( . )

가 2 가  
 가

1919 3 1 3

[ ] (freedom)  
(萬難)

(liberty)

가 (不可讓)

가 가

53)

—1919 4 5 『 』 —

5 3 )FKC, pp. 24-25.

(The Provisional Government of the Korean Republic)

(President) (孫秉熙)

54) 『 』 ‘ , ’

(朴泳孝)

{Secretary [of] State)

, 4 14 ( : 4 15 )

(The Provisional Government of the Republic of Korea)

(玄楯) —4 11

(議政院) (選舉) — ‘ , ’

5 4 )FKC, pp. 26-27 .

4 5 ‘ ( News in papers of the Cabinet of provision-al Gov. [sic] in Manchuria. ) 4 7 ‘ 『 』 : 『 』 p. 137.

4 14 가 『 ( ) 』 ‘ 3 1 ‘ 『 』 (a provisional government on the border of Manchuria) 『 』 . FKC, p. 29. 4

14 가 『 』 ‘ 『 』 4 5 『 』 4 4 가 『 』 (誤報) 『 Secretary [of] State ’

( ) 『 The Syngman Rhee Telegrams, I, p. 63.

가 4 4 ( )

1919 3 21 . . . .

3 17 『 』 (文昌範) · (李東輝) 『 』 (大韓人國民議會)

潘炳律, 『大韓人國民議會成立 組織』 『韓國學報』 46(1987. ), pp. 147-149, 157-167. 『 』

(傳單) 『 』 (間島)( ) 가 『 』 . 趙東杰, 『大韓民國臨時政府』 『韓國民族主義』 『獨立運動史研究』( :





(chief executive) [ ] [ ]

?

( )

( )<sup>57)</sup>

— 3·1 —

(起草者) ‘3·1’

가

가 —

가

가

가 가

1919 8 15

( : )

57) FKG, p. 69.

」 ‘ (宗旨: cardinal principles)

( )

( )

1. 가 [管理]

[ ]

[動作] .(We believe in government which derives its just power from the governed, therefore the government must be conducted for the interest of the people it governs.)

2.

10

[自 治] 가 [公權]

.(We propose to have a government modeled after that of America, as far as possible, consistent with the education of the masses. For the next decade it may be necessary to have more centralized power in the government; but as education of the people improves and as they have more experience in the art of self-governing, they will be allowed to participate more universally in the governmental affairs.)

3.

[sid]

[應從] .(However, we propose to give universal franchise to elect local and provincial legislators, and the provincial legislators elect the representatives to the National Legislature. The National Legislators will have coordinate power with the Executive Branch of the government, and they have sole power to make laws of the nation and is solely responsible to the people whom they represent.)

4. [及]

(大使) [擇用]  
가 [上議院]

[衆命]

[擔責] .(The executive branch consists of President, Vice-President and Cabinet officers, who carry out all the laws made by the National Legislature. The President shall be elected by the members of the National Legislature, and the President has the power to appoint the Cabinet Ministers, Governors of Provinces and other such important executive officials of the government, including envoys to foreign countries. He has the power to make treaties with foreign powers, subject to the approval of the upper house of the National Legislature. The President and his cabinet are responsible to the National Legislature.)

5. 가 가

.(We believe in freedom of religion. Any religion or

doctrine shall be freely taught and preached within the country, provided such teaching does not conflict with the laws or the interest of the nation.)

6. 가

.(We believe in free commerce with all nations of the world, affording the citizens and subjects of all treaty powers equal opportunity and protection for promoting commerce and industry between them and the Korean people.)

7. 가  
.(We believe in education of the people, which is more important than any other governmental activities.)

8. .(We believe in modern sanitary improvements under scientific supervision, as the health of the people is one of the primary considerations of those who govern.)

9. 가  
[宗旨]

.(We believe in free speech and free press. In fact, we are in thorough accord with the principle of democracy, equal opportunity, sound economic policies, free intercourse with the nations of the world, making conditions of life of the entire people most favorable for unlimited development.)

10. [耗損] 가  
.(We believe in liberty of action in all matters, provided such actions or utterances do not interfere with the rights of other

people or conflict with the laws and interests of the nation.)

( )  
( )

.(Let us all pledge our solemn word to carry out these cardinal points to the best of our ability, as long as there is life remaining within us.)<sup>58)</sup>

4. (가)  
( )  
( )

7.

9.

), ( ), ( )

1.

2. (가) 가 (期)

( ) 10

( )( )

( ) ( ) (自治)

3. (가) (鄉) (道)

, 가 3·1  
가

\*가. 가  
\*  
( )

58) , pp. 27-28.

(pp. 145-146)

(pp. 145-146),

(pp. 255-257)

(教導)

<sup>59)</sup>

가

\* .( )

10

\* . 10

\* .

\* .

(The Ypsilanti School of Law)

<sup>60)</sup>

(\* 가 가 .)

가 가 가

24

가 , 가 3·1

가

) (

가 가

10 ( )

... [ ] . [ ]

10

[ ] 가 [ ]

, 10

가 (cardinal principles) [ ]

가

. [ ] [ ]

가

[ ] (安固)

10

59) 1919 8 28 『 』 10~15

가

『 』 597 , 『 』 pp. 52-

(愚民觀)

60) 『 』 : 『 』 p. 141 .  
60) Dae-Sook Suh, ed., The Writings of Henry Cu Kim, p. 130.

[ ] (a great Congress)

(eminent scholars) (無比)

가

가

가

가

[ 가 ]

가

61)

(再三)

가  
가

(大綱)

[ ]

...

[ ]

[ ]

...

[ ]

62)

가

가

가

[ ]

.(You are taking a momentous

step.)

[ ]

가

[ ]

가

가

( 가 )

[ ]

가

[ ]

가

가

[ ]

(important

principles)

...[ ]

]

가

가

[ ]

6 1 )FKC, pp. 42-43.

6 2 )FKC, pp. 34-35.

[ ]

가  
가  
63)

(準)

가

[ ]' 가 .)

· Mr. Chang · Mr. Min

[ ] 가  
64)

6 3 )Ibid ., p. 43.

6 4 )Ibid ., p. 43.

— ' Mr. Chang '

65)

' Mr. Chang '

' Mr. Min '

66)

( : ' )」

· Mr. Chang · Mr. Min

가

가

3 · 1

가

가

6 5 )Ibid, p. 44.

6 6 )Ibid, p. 44.

가. 가 가 3·1  
 ( ) 가  
 3·1  
 [ ] (movement for independence and Christian  
 democracy)  
 67) 4 7 ‘ ,  
 (UP) , “  
 (引導者) [ ]  
 ” 68) 「  
 」 “  
 69) 「  
 」  
 ‘ 가 ’  
 , 가

67) Ibid., p. 9.  
 68) 『 1919 4 8 ( 536 ) 』,  
 69) 『 』, p. 18.

가 3·1  
 “  
 , 가 , , , ,  
 70) (來韓)  
 “ [3·1 ] 5  
 (a new Korea) .  
 71)  
 가 가  
 3·1  
 가 가  
 72)

70) FKC, p. 4.  
 71) Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, ed., Sun-pyo Hong (Seoul: Yonsei University Press, 1999), p. 189.  
 72) 3·1 , 李賢周, 「解題」, 『3·1運動 獨立宣言書 檄文』( : 가 , 2002), pp. 22-24; 金榮秀, 『大韓民國臨時政府憲法論』( : , 1980), p. 93; , 「 』 pp. 316-322 . 19 ~ 20 가



10

「 2 , “

10

가

”

가

10

(善意)

가

(民度)

(訓政)

7. 1920

(Bureau of Information of the Republic of Korea)

74)

7 4 )FKC, p. 70.

73)

10

가 3·1

가

柳永烈, 「李鐘旭·李基白·申虎澈·鄭萬祚·柳永烈」, 『韓國史上 政治形態』( 1993), pp. 294-311; 李泰鎮, 「開港 光武改革」, 『震檀學報』 84 (1997. 12), pp. 91, 121-123, 131; 李鐘旭, 「假憲法」( 2000), pp. 106-169-170 (1910) ( ) 가 — 趙東杰, 「臨時政府 樹立 1917 ‘大同團結宣言」( 『韓國學論叢』 9(1987), p. 131; 李賢周, 「假憲法」, 『韓國學』 48: ( 2001), pp.105-107; 李賢周, 『假憲法』 pp. 53-68, 314 7 3 ) 가 3·1 가 1919 4 10 가 (假憲法) 가 尹大遠, 「大韓民國臨時政府 組織·運營 獨立方略 (1919- 1930)」, 『大韓民國臨時政府 組織·運營 獨立方略』(1919- 1930) 大學校 大學院 國史學科, 文學博士學位論文, 1999, pp. 31-32 ( ) 가 (崔漢綺, 1803~ 1873) 『地球典要』(1857) 1905 가 가 ( ) , 「 1994), pp. 55-110; 『大韓民國臨時政府 組織·運營 獨立方略』(1880) 『大韓民國臨時政府 組織·運營 獨立方略』32: 2(1998 ), pp. 105-124

8 25 (adviser) 가

75) —1920 9 8 「 (閣員) (諸公) 」 . 76) 9 22 ‘ [ ]’ . 77) 1920 (觀)

75) pp. 150-145 .  
 76) ( ) “ To the Members of the Provisional Government of [sic] the Republic of Korea, Shanghai, China ” , 가 ( #00101253-55). 1920 11 25 가  
 77) ( ) “[To] Dr. Syngman Rhee, President, Provisional Government, Republic of Korea ” , 가 ( #00101259-63). (梨花莊所藏) 粵南李承晚文書: 東文篇 ( ) ( : , 1998), 17 , pp. 106-116 「大統領 閣下 致 徐載弼 博士 書翰: 大韓民國臨時大統領 李承晚 閣下」

1919 9 11 ‘ , ’ .

(諸公) (私函)

가

....

가

....

가 가

(樂從)

(首班) (良策)

(官稱)

가

.... 78)

78) 1920 11 25 , 「 가 」



(在) 가 가  
 가 가  
 (如) (忍)  
 (失)  
 (不合)  
 (竭誠)  
 가 <sup>80)</sup>  
 1919 8 9 1  
<sup>81)</sup>  
 가  
 1920 가  
 가  
<sup>82)</sup>  
 1 (1919.9 ~ 1920.8)  
 1920 10 3 —  
 (Outline of  
 Policy and Organization of Government;  
 )

<sup>80)</sup> Ibid, pp. 108-109.  
<sup>81)</sup> 1, 孫世一, 『李承晩 金九』 ( : , 1970), pp. 381-386 .  
<sup>82)</sup> 가, Philip Jaisohn Kiusic Kimm, Aug. 6, 1920( #00101233) .

<sup>83)</sup> 「 」  
 「 」  
 3·1  
 10 (訓政)  
 「 」가  
 가. 10 ‘ ’  
 「 」 1 10  
 가  
 (代議的)  
 [ ] 10  
 가 . [ ] [ ]  
 [ ] <sup>84)</sup>

<sup>83)</sup> , 1920 가 가 (1766-1391 No. 43)  
 , 『1921 ~ 1922』 ↓  
 『 』 ( : , 1989), 6, pp. 206, 210.  
 Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea, pp. 204-209  
 1919 ~ 1920 , 李相勳, 『金奎植 歐美委員部 (1919-1920)』 , 1995, pp. 20-68 .  
<sup>84)</sup> Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea, pp. 204-205.

가 (專橫)

가

10 가 3·1 「 」 11, 12 가

(elitist) 가

— 「 」 5 (defenseless) [ ]

가

가 [ ] 86)

(appeal) 가 [ ] 2/3 가 (initiatives)

85) 가 가 (差待)

87)

8 5 )Ibid, pp. 205-206.

8 6 )Ibid, pp. 206-207.

8 7 )Ibid, p. 207.

가  
가  
(教化)

「 2 15

10 88)

[ ] 가

[ ]

....<sup>89)</sup>

3·1

88) Ibid, p. 205.  
89) Ibid, pp. 207-208.

가  
10  
10

10 「 4

10  
[ ] 가  
[ ] 가<sup>90)</sup>

가 1942 8 20 「  
가 (“What Form of

90) Ibid, pp. 205.

Gov n't Do the Koreans Want )

(自薦論)

「 」 가

{總顧問官: The General Adviser

to/of the Government)

[ ]

[ ] [ ]

가

(power of attorney)

가 [ ]

가

[ ]

10

{專門

93)

諮問院: Technical Board)

1896 ~ 1898

가

94)

[ ] 10

가 (specialists)

12 (主) (principals) 12

(assistants)

[ ] (expert)

.... 92)

9 3 )Ibid, pp. 208-209.

9 4 ) (尹致昊) 가

(理財)

. 國史編纂委員會 ,『尹致昊日記』

( : , 1974-1975), 2, pp. 72, 81, 100-102, 110-111, 136-137, 147,; 3, pp. 148-149; Dae-Sook Suh, ed., The Writings of Henry Cu Kim, p. 169; 玄楯,『華盛頓外交實記』( ), pp. 15-16.

9 1 ) The New Korea, August 20, 1942.

9 2 ) Philip Jaisohn, op. cit., p. 205.

19

20

가

가

가 3.1

가

가

가

1919 4 14 ~ 16

1

‘ The First Korean Congress ’

10

가

가 3.1

가

(親)

가

가 ‘ 가

가

10

가

가

가

150 가

가

「

」

10

「

」

1920 가

3.1

10



. , 1945 12 3  
 , 4 5  
 .  
 , 10  
 , 10  
 3·1  
 . 1919  
 「 」  
 가 1919 8  
 9 1  
 .  
 .<sup>95)</sup> 가 「 」  
 1948  
 가 가  
 가 10  
 .  
 1919 3 3  
 (The League of Nations) , 1943 12  
 1945 4 (Franklin D. Roosevelt)가  
 (Joseph Stalin) 50 20

. , 1945 12 3  
 , 4 5  
 .  
 , 10  
 , 10  
 3·1  
 . 1919  
 「 」  
 가 1919 8  
 9 1  
 .  
 .<sup>95)</sup> 가 「 」  
 1948  
 가 가  
 가 10  
 .  
 1919 3 3  
 (The League of Nations) , 1943 12  
 1945 4 (Franklin D. Roosevelt)가  
 (Joseph Stalin) 50 20  
 95 ) 1919 8 15 ,<sup>96)</sup>  
 가 「 」 ( )<sup>97)</sup> 가  
 가 1919 8  
 . “ ( )  
 가 )  
 가 1 가  
 金哲洙, 『韓國憲法史』 ( : , 1988), p. 20.

1948

10

12

, 1919

1948

3 · 1

가

(方略)

|

|

(1864 1951)

가 , 『 가 』  
가 가

가

가  
가

가

가

3·1

1) 홍善杓, 「徐載弼 獨立運動(1919 1922研究)」, 『  
』7, 1993 .

1922

1)

가가

가

2)

3

4)

가 가

(勤王)

(朝)

(內政)

1.

1)

5)

1896

1898

(胚胎)

1884

1

(清國)

3)

(清)

2) Ed., Sun-Pyo Hong, My Days in Korean and Other Essays(Yonsei University, 1999)

3) 金道泰, 『徐載弼博士自敘傳』, 108

4) 『東亞日報』, 1935 1 1, 「回顧 甲申政變」; “ My Days in Korea, ” The New Korea August 25, 1938.

5) 申福龍, 『』, 1993, 202

가

....

가

가

가

6)

『

』

‘

’

가.

7)

가

(臣民)

가3

가

8)

가

가

가

가가

6) 『 1896 4 7 , 『 』

7) 『 1896 6 20 , 『 』

8) \_\_\_\_\_

(露國)

1948 3 『 』

1895 (下關)

가

11)

9) 『 』 1896 5 16 , 『 』 ↓  
 10) 『 』 1898 1 20 , 『 』 ↓  
 11) 『新民日報』, 1948 3 14 .

2)

(1)

『 』

12)

가

20

가

13)

12) 가 .  
 慎鏞廈, 『獨立協會研究』, 一朝閣, 1985.  
 李光麟, 『 』 『 』, 1989.  
 金雲泰, 『 』 『 』, 1993.  
 13) 『 My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, May 11, 1939.』

. 1919 4 14 16  
3·1 ' 1 ( ' )

.<sup>15)</sup>

가  
가

(庚戌國恥, 1910)

가

.<sup>16)</sup>

가

.<sup>17)</sup>

가

3·1

.<sup>14)</sup>

가

가

15 ) , 272-273 .

16 )

“

가

가 가

가

高揚

...  
.(元聖玉 譯,

『最初 韓國議會』, 1986, 109-110 )

17 ) 美國觀 「

“

( 2

- )가

”

.(『

14 ) 『 1 』, 1986, 223-224 .

』 8 , 1949. 8, 7-8 )

. 3·1

3·1

(玄楯) , 가3·1

<sup>18)</sup>

3·1

<sup>19)</sup>

3·1

<sup>20)</sup>

(國務卿)

(主義) “

” <sup>21)</sup> 1919 3

(Demming) 1 , 4 15 ‘

<sup>22)</sup> ‘ 1 ‘

가

<sup>23)</sup>

18 ) 3 5

3 3 1 . 『 』

1919 3 13 , 「 』

19 )<sup>P</sup> 1919 3 20 , 「 3 14 ‘ 』

20 )<sup>P</sup> 1919 3 23 , 「 3 19 』 4 10 , 「

1919 4 1 , ‘ 』 .

21 )<sup>P</sup> 1919 4 8 .

22 ) , 168 .

23 ) 가3·1

金承台, 「 3·1 『韓國基督敎會史研究』

25 (1989.4), 17-24 .

가 『 』 <sup>24)</sup>

가 ,

3·1

가 가

가

가 <sup>25)</sup>

<sup>26)</sup>

가

1

가가

「 』

가 <sup>27)</sup>

24 )<sup>P</sup> 1896 8 20 , 「 』

25 ) 1919 6 6 D.C 韓國親友會

. ( Dr. Philip Jaisohn's Address, "Korea Review,

July 1919)

26 ) "Sympathy of American Churches for Korea, "Korea Review, August 1919.

27 ) 「 1 』 『 』 , 255-256 .



「 」

가 ‘ ’

<sup>28)</sup> ‘ 1

<sup>29)</sup>

(夢想)

1922

3·1

(2)

가

...3

3·1 가

35

1

가

가

가

3·1

가

3·1

가

가

3·1

가

3

가

가

가

가

1919

가

가

가  
(劣等人) 가

<sup>29)</sup> 1919 11 20 「

<sup>28)</sup> , 1986, 293-294 .

가  
가  
가  
가? <sup>30)</sup>

3·1  
가  
3·1

1924 5 13 17 『 』  
“ (Courage and Cooperation)

<sup>31)</sup>

<sup>32)</sup>

가

가 <sup>33)</sup>

가

“  
가 ” <sup>34)</sup>

<sup>35)</sup>

가

<sup>36)</sup>

가

<sup>37)</sup>

가

3 0 )“ Koreans Celebration March 1st, ”Korea Review, April 1922; 『 』, 70 : 『 』, 1992, 54-55 .

3 1 )Ed. Sun-Pyo Hong, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, Yonsei University, 1999, p. 239.

3 2 )ibid p. 240.

3 3 )“ Let us face the New Year with smile, ”ChosunilboJanuary 1-5.

3 4 )『朝鮮日報』1925 1 14 , 『 』 ↓

3 5 )“ Random Thought: Korea and World Affair, ”The New Korea, April 29, 1937.

3 6 )“ My Days in Korea, ”The New Korea, November 30, 1939.

3 7 ) 『 』

가

40)

38)

39)

가

41)

가

4

가

42)

가

가

40)

41) My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, May 11, 1939.

42) Dr. Philip Jaisohn's Address, "Korea Review, July 1919.

38) "My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, December 7, 1939.

39)

1940

가

<sup>44)</sup> 가

1.

가

2.

<sup>45)</sup> 3·1

3.

4.

가  
가

가

<sup>46)</sup>

가

가

<sup>47)</sup>

5.

<sup>48)</sup>

가

<sup>49)</sup>

가

<sup>43)</sup>

(3)

4 4 )" My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, October 13, 1939; ,<sup>ㅁ</sup>  
 , 1993, 116-117 .

4 5 )" Koreans Demand Real Independence, "Korea Review, October 1919.

4 6 )

4 7 )<sup>ㅁ</sup> 1920 1 15 ,<sup>ㄱ</sup>

4 8 )" My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, August 25, 1938.

4 9 )<sup>ㅁ</sup> 1921 7 7 ; 14 ,<sup>ㄱ</sup>

4 3 )" My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, February 29, 1940.

가 1920 6 11

53)

The Korean Situation No.2

Korea Review

2.

1)

50)

51)

가  
1918 11 1  
가

1918 12 19

가 “ 가

...

” 52)

가 가 ,

[ ]

가 가 (命)

, 가가

가 , 가가

5 0 )“ The Korean Situation No.2, ” Korea Review, July 1920;“ New York League Formed;”Korea Review, May 1920.

5 1 )“ New York League Formed, ”Korea Review, May 1920.

5 2 )<sup>2</sup> 1919 11 22 , 「 : ↓

5 3 )“ New York League Formed, ”Korea Review, May 1920.

가

가 ,  
가 .

가

가 (海內)

54)

가

50

50

(鄭翰景)

1919 2 3

(今回之事)

가

가

가

가

55)

가

,  
가

『 』 가

1919 1 4

2 24

50

56)

가

5 5 ) 『現代史資料』25, 444

5 6 ) 『 』, 1919 3 13 , 『 』 25

5 4 ) 『 』 1919 2 20 , 『 』

57)

1919 2

2

58)

7

, 3·1

59)

가

3·1

가

1919 3 13

3·1

가 , ,

3·

1

---

57) 1919 3 6 , 「 ↓  
 58) 1919 3 13 , 「 ↓  
 59) 1919 3 29 , 「 ↓

(在留)

3·1

60)

3·1

3·1

61)

4 14 16 ‘ 1 ’  
150 6

62)

63)

---

60) 1919 3 20 , 「 ↓ “ ”  
 外交獨立論 3.1

61) 1925 7 가 가

“ 30 (1898 : ) 1919 3.1

62) 1925 6 25 , 「 가

63) 洪善杓, 「徐載弼 獨立運動(1919-1922研究」, 『 7, 1993, 197-198 .

‘ 1 ’

4 15

<sup>64)</sup>  
가

<sup>65)</sup>

4 19

<sup>66)</sup>

Korea Review

1919

3

3

10

<sup>67)</sup>

(白一圭)

1919 4 29

가

6 4 ) , 169-170 .

6 5 ) , 『3·1』 1991, 174-175 ; 186-187 .

6 6 ) , 116 187-188 .

6 7 ) 『 Koreans Celebration March 1st, "Korea Review, April 1922.

가 ....

(美

人)

<sup>68)</sup>

가 ‘ 1 ’

( F.W.Tomkins ) ,

( H.A.

Miller ) , I.N.S(International News Service)

( G.

Benedict)

5 2

5 16

<sup>69)</sup>

가

가

<sup>70)</sup>

(親韓)

6 8 ) 『 1919 5 6 , 『

6 9 )

가 . ( , , 113 )

7 0 ) 『 League of the Friends of Korea, "Korea Review, March 1920.



71) 1919 5 16  
 1923 21  
 1 2 5  
 3·1  
 72) 가  
 (1921.11.11 1922.2.6)  
 가 1921 7  
 外交力 60  
 73) 가  
 1922 3·1

가 “ [ ;  
 ] ” 74)  
 , , 가  
 가 가  
 , (英日)  
 75)  
 .가

7 1 )<sup>㉑</sup> 1919 5 27 , 「  
 7 2 ) 洪善杓, , 35-48 .  
 7 3 )<sup>㉒</sup> 1921 11 3 , 「 34 .

7 4 )<sup>㉓</sup> 1922 2 23 , 「  
 7 5 ) .

가

가

?

3 Korea Review가

가

가

... 가

가

.76)

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

가

7 6 )“ Koreans Celebration March 1st, ”Korea Review, April 1922; , 70 : , 1992. 55 .

가 가  
가

가

가

....가

.78)

1920 9 8

.77)

2)

(1)

가

가

가가

가

.79)

가

.80) 1924 9

가

“ ”

가

.가

78) 1919 11 22

16 「 11 25 「 12  
1920 3 1 「 1920 11 25 「

79) 1920 11 25 「 가

80) "Do You Know What Korea Expects of You?" The Korean Student Bulletin, July 1925.

77) Cultural and Propaganda, "The Korean Student Bulletin, March-April 1939.

가  
가

가

가  
가

82)

8 1 )" Do You Know What Korea Expects of You? "The Korean Student Bulletin, July 1925.

8 2 )" Random Thought : Help Your People, "The New Korea, April 22, 1937.

가

가

83)

(2)

가

가 가

“  
가”

8 3 )" My Impression of Ahn Chang Ho, " The Korean Student Bulletin, April-May

가 .  
가 . 가  
가 . 가 .  
(修) 가 .  
가 .  
86)  
『 』 4 (1930) 「 」  
가  
(先入主見)  
(學得)

8 6 ) 『 東亞日報 』 1922 9 14 , 「 」 ↓

識) 가 (正路) 가 (無智沒) 가  
(脚下) 가  
(愚者)가  
가 . 84)  
가  
가  
1922 3 . 1  
5  
가  
가  
85)

1922 9 『 』

8 4 ) 『 新民 』 1925 10 , 「 社會教化 ‘ 新民 ’ 使命 」 .  
8 5 ) “ Koreans Celebration March 1st, ” Korea Review, April 1922; , 『  
70 : 』 , 1992. 55 .

가 (理智)  
 2 가 (題)  
 號) (榮革)  
 (貪醉)  
 가 가  
 가 가

가  
 가  
 (立)

87)

89)

가

88)

90)

(3)

87) 『 』 4 (1930).  
 88) "My Days in Korea," *The New Korea*, November 10, 1938.

89) 『 』 1922 9 14 , 『  
 90) "My Days in Korea," *The New Korea*, February 23, 1939.

가 (遍滿) 가

(無疑) 92)

「 (管見) 」

가 가 가

가 가 가 가 가 93)

3

가 94)

가

가

(早計) (好成的)

(不眠不休)

(絶命)

!

( )

가 가

9 2 ) 『新民』, 1926 9 , 「新民 6 “純宗實記” 」。  
9 3 ) 『産業』, 1 (1930.5), 「朝鮮 經濟發展 對 管見」。  
9 4 ) 「My Days in Korea, "The New Korea, March 9, 1939.

9 1 ) 「Koreans Celebration March 1st, "Korea Review, April 1922.

가 가

가  
가

95)

가

가

가

3·1

가

95) 徐載弼 『産業』 1 (1930.5) 「朝鮮 經濟發展 對 管見」  
13

2

가 가



가

가

가

가

가

| |

1.

(韓末), ,

가 . 가  
.1)

, ‘ ’

1947 7 1

(John R. Hodge)

1) , 『 ( : , 1996) .

가 1948 9 12 (歸美) 1  
2 , 가 .

가? 가  
가?  
가? , , 가  
가?  
(主義) · (主張) 가?  
가 ,  
가 ,  
( )  
가  
1 2  
1895 1898 5 2 5

2. : ,

2)  
1946 8 (William R.  
Langdon)

1946 9 21 4)  
2 ) 1946 9 14  
168 , “ : ( : , 1984), pp. 166,  
, 1986), pp. 125-126 ( , , TFPOL 40, 1946 9  
21 ) . 1947 3 3

3 ) ,<sup>ㅁ</sup> ( : , 1948), pp. 297-298.  
4 ) ,<sup>ㅁ</sup> : p. 170.  
10 3 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn(Elkins  
Park, PA: The Philip Jaisohn Memorial Foundation, 1984), p. 267.  
10 10 ,<sup>ㅁ</sup> :  
p. 169. 가 1947 1 13 ,  
p. 170 . 1947 3 가  
가 ,<sup>ㅁ</sup> p.  
298; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 266.  
(Wallace Chadwick)  
(Robert P. Patterson) 가

(病) 가

가 ,

6)

가 .

가

“가 ” 가 “

7)

가

,

,

”

“

가

가

,

,

가

”

.

“

1947 3 , (Archer L. Lerch)

3 6

가

”

3 13

,

5)

“

, , 3

” “

” , 가“

”

8)

“ 가 ” 9)

“

(claims) , 3

. Ibid, p. 268.

6) , 1973, ), p. 308; :  
( : , 1997), p. 221.

7) , pp. 308-309.

8) 1947 3 13 .

9) .

5) : pp. 166, 168.

가 ”  
 10) 1947 6 , 6  
 20 “ ”  
 ” 11)

가 가?  
 가 1947 3 가 ,  
 “ ” 12)  
 “ ”  
 13)  
 ( ) 7  
 “ ”

10) 1947 3 8 .  
 11) 1947 6 21 .  
 12) p. 298; p. 311. 1947 7 1  
 6 “ ”  
 1947 7 2 : pp. 171-172 ;  
 p. 316. 1948 9 “ ”  
 “ ” 가 “ ”  
 p. 365.  
 13) p. 298; p. 311.

가  
 “ ”  
 “ ” 14)

15)  
 가  
 16)

14) “ ”  
 , 2002 12 17 .  
 15) ( : , 1995), p. 33.  
 1947 ~ 1948 가  
 (Muriel Jaisohn)  
 7 가 15  
 30 1947 9 12  
 1948 8 27 , 1 40  
 Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 290. 10  
 , 10 40 , 6·25  
 10 , pp. 5, 34, 42.  
 가  
 “ ”  
 1948 10 가  
 1948 5·10 , pp. 73-74.  
 , pp. 47-95; Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays,  
 ed. Sun-pyo Hong (Seoul: Institute for Modern Korean Studies, Yonsei University  
 Press, 1999), pp. 361-415.  
 가 6  
 1948 3 12  
 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp,  
 290(fn.2), 348.  
 16) Channing Liem, America's Finest Gift to Korea: The Life of Philip Jaisohn(New

.<sup>17)</sup>

. 가 1947 7

12

(Chief Advisor on Korean Affairs to the Commanding General of the U.S. Army Forces in Korea)<sup>18)</sup>

,<sup>20)</sup>

가

1947 7 3

가 “ 가

가

.<sup>21)</sup>

1948 5·10 7 20

1

.<sup>22)</sup>

” ,

가

가

가

.<sup>19)</sup>

.<sup>23)</sup>

.<sup>24)</sup>

가 1898

17 ) 1947 8 28 (Albert C. Wedemeyer)

49 , 84

가 “ ” !  
“ ” ,<sup>19)</sup> p. 76; ,<sup>19)</sup> pp. 325-326; “ : ”<sup>19)</sup> ( : , 1986), p. 147; ,<sup>19)</sup> ( : , 1980), p. 40.

.<sup>25)</sup> 1 40

18 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 265. 207 “ Dr. Philip Jaisohn, Special Counselor ”

20 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 272.

21 ) Ibid, p. 265.

22 )<sup>19)</sup> 1948 7 20 .

23 ) ,<sup>19)</sup> pp. 356-357.

24 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 306.

. Ibid, p. 285.

25 ) 1864 1 7 ( 1863 11 23 ) ,

19 ) Channing Liem, American Finest Gift to Korea, pp. 73-74; ,<sup>19)</sup> 4

83 6

<sup>26)</sup> 2, 3 <sup>27)</sup> 84  
1947

3 7

<sup>28)</sup>  
<sup>29)</sup> 가

<sup>30)</sup>

<sup>31)</sup>

3. : , , ,

가? 가

26) Ibid, pp. 309, 349(fn.7).

27) Ibid, p. 285.

28) <sup>28)</sup> 1947 6 21 .

29) <sup>29)</sup> 377 가 , 가 52  
가 가 <sup>29)</sup> 1947 11 15 .

30) (Philip Jaisohn Hardigan)  
(Media) , 가

, 1948 (Dr.  
Richard Oakey) . <sup>30)</sup> : <sup>30)</sup> p. 179;  
“ : ( )” ; <sup>30)</sup> p. 117.

31) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 265. 1948 5·10  
20 . Ibid, p. 305.

, 가

<sup>32)</sup> 3

1 2

가  
, (反)

<sup>33)</sup>

가

1947 12

가 가  
가

<sup>35)</sup>

32) <sup>32)</sup> p. 334; <sup>32)</sup> pp. 71, 74.

33) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 273.

34) <sup>34)</sup> p. 94.

35) <sup>35)</sup> 3 II: 1945-1948( : , 1985), pp. 339-352.

가

36)

가

1948 3

37)

(off the record)

38)

”

39)

36) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 292.

37) 1948 3 14 .

38) : pp. 173-175.

가 (off the record) ”

1948 4 26 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 302-

304

39) ” “ 가 ”

“ 가 ”

” 4 가 ”

1948 4 26 , Ibid, pp. 302-

304

“ 5·10

(catalyst)

가 ”

40)

가

가

가

”

5·10

(honeymoon)

가

41)

가

40) : pp. 173-175.

41) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 310.

가

1948 5 16 . 가 (William P. Dean)

“ 가 ” pp. 94-95.





가 7 51) 50) “ ” 52) 1948 3 53) 5-10 가

5 0 )Ibid, pp. 292-293.  
 5 1 )' 7 가 . 가 7 가 . Ibid, pp. 293-294.  
 5 2 )<sup>P</sup> 1948 3 17 ( ). Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 294-295 .  
 5 3 )Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 295-296.  
 5 4 ) 1948 4 “ ” 1948 4 26 . Ibid, pp. 302-304 .

54) 가 . ' , 55) 7 가 가 “ 까 ” 56) 1948 2 16 , 가 57) 1948 4 가 가 가 . Ibid, p. 5 5 )Ibid, pp. 296-297. . Ibid, p. 295. 가 . Ibid, p. 318. 5 6 ) 1948 4 26 . Ibid, pp. 302-304 . 5 7 )Ibid, p. 297.

, , 가

가

58)

“가 ” , 59)

, 가

63) 1948

“ ” 60)

가 64)

가 1948 9 11

30

“ 가

가

” 61)

가?

65)

가

62)

가

가

‘ ’ , 가 가

1948 4

가

4

5 8 )Ibid, pp. 299-300.

5 9 ) , 『 』 p. 361.

6 0 ) , 『 』 p. 37.

6 1 ) 1950 1 27 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 324-325 .

6 2 ) , 『 』 pp. 102-103.

6 3 )Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 313.

6 4 )Ibid, pp. 313-314.

6 5 ) , 『 』 . Ibid, pp. 304-305.

가

66)

67)

4.

가 1947 7 17 ,

66 ) . Ibid, pp.

309-310.

67 ) (從孫) 가

68 ) , 2002 12 20 . pp. 346-347; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 282.

가

가

가

69)

?

?

가

?, 3

?

? (私人)

?,

?

?

가

?

69 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 282-283.  
70 ) Ibid

가 ?<sup>70)</sup>

가

가

( )

(1)

가

10 가<sup>71)</sup>

50 “

”

“

”

71)

“

7 1 ) “ ” p. 95.

7 2 ) (II) : , 1987), p. 303; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 274.

” ,<sup>72)</sup>

가 19

1947 11 16 , ‘ 50 ’

, 1896

가

“

”

73)

“ ”

74)

50

가 가

가

가

75)

“

7 3 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ On the Occasion of Benediction of the Independence Arch, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, p. 405; ,<sup>72)</sup> p. 48, 50; ,<sup>71)</sup> p. 18.

7 4 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ On the Occasion of Benediction of the Independence Arch, ” p. 405.

7 5 ) Ibid, p. 406.

” , 가

76)

77)

가

78)

79)

가

80)

(公私)

가

76) Ibid; , pp. 48, 50; , p. 18.

77) “ ” “ | ” “

II”; , pp. 52-59; Philip Jaisohn, “Spiritual Power,” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 389-390; Philip Jaisohn, “Speech to Christian Organizations in Seoul,” pp. 409-410.

78) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 274.

79) , pp. 339-340. ‘徐’ (從曾孫)

, 2002 12 20 .

80) Channing Liem, American Finest Gift to Korea, pp. 74-75; , pp. 338-339.

81) “ ? ”

가 , pp. 339-340.

“ ( ) 가

” , 2002 12 20 .

81) 가

82)

83)

84) 가 “

” “

” 85)

가 86)

(2) , , 가

가 ,

82) American Finest Gift to Korea

가 PEACE . PEACE Peace ( ), Equality( ), Ability( ), Common sense( ), Ethical behavior( )

가 (acronym) . Channing Liem, American Finest Gift to Korea pp. 86-89. “ 가 ”

“ ” , (II) p. 307.

83) 1948 ,

Channing Liem, American Finest Gift to Korea, pp. 75-76.

84) 1950 , “ 가 . ”

Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 332.

85) Channing Liem, American Finest Gift to Korea, p. 77.

86) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 274-275; , pp. 304-305; “ ” , p. 163.

87) 1948 “ 가 . ( )

” “ ”(

가 ,<sup>87)</sup>

가

가

2

<sup>90)</sup>

가

가

“ ”

가

<sup>88)</sup> 1947 11 16

50 50

가 가

<sup>89)</sup>

50

<sup>91)</sup>

가

가

가

<sup>92)</sup>

88) Philip Jaisohn, "Liberty and Independence," in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, p. 403; 1947 8 16 ; pp. 331-332; " : " p. 169.

89) " ; p. 15; " ; p. 141; p. 34. Philip Jaisohn, "On the Occasion of Benediction of the Independence Arch," p. 404; 1947 11 18 .

90) Philip Jaisohn, "Personal Liberty," in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays pp. 367-368.

91) Ibid, pp. 368-369.

92) Ibid, p. 369.





1948 3 “

가

가

”

101)

3·1

가30

“

가

”

“

가

”

“

”

“

”

“

가

3·1

100) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 298-299.

1948 7 “ ” , Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 304

101) 1948 8 15 .

”

가

“

”

가

102)

(3)

가

“

”

“

가’

가

103)

“

가

“

”

” “

가’

” “

가

102) “ (1949 ) ; , pp. 153-154.

103) 가 가 , “ ” : 가 ( : , 1975), p. 31.

가 ” . “ 가 ” . 104 가 ” . 105 가 ” . 106 1 2 가? ”

104 ) pp. 225-226 . 1948 3 14 . : 105 ) (II) pp. 294-295. 106 ) 1948 8 30 가 “ 가 ” “ 가 ” “ 가 ” 1948, 9 1 . 107 ) pp. 73-74; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 289-290; pp. 319-321.

가 ” 107 “ ” 1947 9 12 “ ( “ ) ” 108 가 “ 가? ” 가 ” . 109 가 ( ) 10

108 ) “ ” “ ” (The Privileges and Responsibilities of Citizenship) . Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 361-362; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 289-290; pp. 73-74; pp. 299-303; pp. 319-321 . 1948 10 가 1948 5 10 “ ” pp. 73-74. 109 ) pp. 73-74; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 289-290; pp. 319-321.





“ ” , “ 가 , , “ 가 ” , “ ” . “ ” . 120 가 . , 가 121) ‘ 가 가 . 가 가 122

1 2 0 )bid, pp. 384-385.  
1 2 1 )bid, pp. 385-386.  
5 · 10 가  
가  
5 · 10 가  
가  
p. 351.  
1 2 2 )Philip Jaisohn, “ The Way to Freedom and Democracy, ”p. 386.

가 123  
가 124  
가 125  
가 1948  
8 28 , 가 “ 126

1 2 3 )bid, p. 387. 가  
“ :  
( ), p. 1948 6 11 .  
1 2 4 )Philip Jaisohn, “ Human Life, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essayspp. 396-398. 1947 12 3 .  
1 2 5 ) , “ ( ), p. 1948 6 11 .  
1 2 6 ) 1948 8 29 .

가

가

” 127)

8 30

“

”

가

1949 3 - 1

129

129)

131)

132) “

”

“

”

133)

가

“

가

“

가?”

130)

( )

(富力)

” 134)

가

135)

가

가

131) , pp. 81-82.

132) , : 가

pp. 32.

133) , “ ( ) , 1948 1 1 .

134) 1947 11 7 .

135) 1948 3 14 .

, : pp. 225 .

127) ; , p. 364; , pp. 127-128.

128) 1948, 9 1 .

129) , “ (1949 ) ”; pp. 153-154.

130) , pp. 80-82.

1947

가 “ 가

” “

” “

” 136

(4)

“

” 137

가

136 ) . 2002 2 10 . “

137 )

”

가

. Channing Liem, *America's Finest Gift to Korea*, p. 75.

가

” , 2002 12 20 .

가

. Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 286.

138 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ How to Make a Living, ” in Philip Jaisohn, *My Days in Korea and Other Essays*, pp. 364-366.

138

139 “

” 140

가 , ,

141

“

” “

가

가 , ,

가

” 142

143

“ 가? ”

가

, 가

139 ) Channing Liem, *America's Finest Gift to Korea*, pp. 73-74.

140 ) *ibid.*, p. 77.

” “

: ” 62 , 1925 8 . “ : ”

” : “ ( : , 2001), p. 406

141 ) “ ( ), ” 1948 6 11 .

142 ) ” pp. 304-305.

143 ) ” p. 380.

가 ,  
,  
,  
8 ,  
144  
,  
,  
가 , 가  
가 , 가 ,  
,  
,  
145  
2  
,  
38  
,  
146  
“  
가  
가

1 4 4 ) Philip Jaisohn, "How to Make a Living," pp. 364-365.  
1 4 5 ) ibid, pp. 365-366.  
1 4 6 ) Philip Jaisohn, "Liberty and Independence," pp. 403-404.

가 가  
가? ” , “  
”  
147  
,  
,  
,  
가 148  
1947 11 5  
“  
” “  
67  
13  
가  
“  
가 ” 150  
147 ) ,<sup>147</sup> pp. 304-305.  
148 ) , “ ( ) ,<sup>148</sup> 1948 6 11 .  
149 )  
50 가 , , 가  
가 40 .<sup>149</sup>  
150 ) .<sup>150</sup>  
1947 11 7 .



가 “ 가 가 가  
가

, 13  
, 153  
21 가

가  
” “ 가  
” 가  
“ ”  
”  
151)  
“  
가 ”  
“  
”

1948 “  
” “  
가 가  
가 가  
154)

152)

13

1 5 1 ㄱ 1947 11 7 .  
1 5 2 ㄱ 1948 3 14 . , ㄱ

ㄱ p. 225 .

1 5 3 ㄱ Philip Jaisohn, “ Money Power, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essayspp. 391-392.

1 5 4 ㄱ 1948 1 1 .



“ 가

.169

” , “

” , “

3 가

가

” .163

가 1948 8 28

가

가

“

”

.169

가

“

2

” .164 ,

38

38

“ ( )

”

(5)

38

.167

가

가

.168

가

가

1947

1 6 3 ) . 1939 (從祖父)

1 6 6 Philip Jaisohn, “ Korean Problems, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 374-375.

“ ,

” , 2002 12 20 .

1 6 4 ) 1948 8 29 .

1 6 5 ) 가 “ ”

“ 가 ”

” , p. 165. 1980 5 31

” , 9 , 1988 10 ( :

1 6 7 Philip Jaisohn, “ Liberty and Independence, ” pp. 403-404.

1 6 8 ) 5 · 10 가 “ (急步) 5

(深愼) ”

1 6 9 ) “ II ” , 1948 6 13 .

” , pp. 56-57.

가 169

“ ”

가 ”

170

1948 “40

” ,

“ 가

가

가 가

” , “ 1940

” 171

(Menon) 가38

가 가 가가

“ ” ,

172

1948 4 10 ,

가

170 ) , “ ? ” , pp. 85-86.  
 171 ) 1948 1 1 .  
 172 ) Philip Jaisohn, “The United Nations Commission on Korea(2),” pp. 373-374.

”

“

가 . 가 ”

” 173

5·10 가 ,

“ ” , “ ” , “

” ,

가 174

가 “ ” 175

가

“

173 ) 1948 4 13 .  
 174 ) .  
 175 ) 5·10 , 가 , , , . Philip Jaisohn, “Korean Problems,” pp. 374-375.

가

1 2

176

“ ”

177

5·10

“ ” “ ”

”

“

”

“

”

178

. 1948 8 28

“

. 38 2

가

가

”

179

1948 9 11

”

,

“ 가

“ 4 가

가

” “

” “

가

”

180

가

. 1949 3 1

가

181

“ 가

3·1

가

3·1

?”

182

“

,

,

”

176 ㄱ 1948 5 16 .

177 ㄱ 1948 5 30 .

178 )Philip Jaisohn, " The Way to Freedom and Democracy, "p. 386.

179 ㄱ 1948 8 29 .

180 ㄱ 1948 9 12 .

181 ) , " (1949 )

; pp. 153-155.

182 ) , p. 154.

( ) , “ ” 185 가 .

가 .

183 “ , ”

4 가 (異論) “ ”

184 “ ”

(6) ( )

1 8 3 ) , pp. 154-155.  
 1 8 4 ) , p. 155.

1 8 5 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ One World, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays pp. 407-408.

가 . Philip Jaisohn, “ Korea Needs An English-language Periodicals, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays pp. 408-409.

1 8 6 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ On the Occasion of Benediction of the Independence Arch, ” p. 406. 가 (best friend) . Philip Jaisohn, “ Korean Problems, ” pp. 375-376.

1 8 7 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ The Way to Freedom and Democracy, ” pp. 386-387.

1 8 8 ) , “ (1949 ) ” ; pp. 153-154. 가 1947 7 12 , “ ” . 1947 7 13 .

가 ” 188  
1949 3 1

1 2

가  
가

가  
가

189

190

가

189 ) ,“ (1949 )  
190 )

; pp. 153-154.

가

191)

가 ‘ 가  
192 가

193

가 가 ,  
가

191 Philip Jaisohn, “ On the Occasion of Benediction of the Independence Arch, ” p.  
406. 가  
가가

가

. Ibid; ,“ 50 ; , 5  
p. 51.

192 Philip Jaisohn, “ Speech to Christian Organizations in Seoul, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My  
Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 409-410.

. Philip Jaisohn, “ The  
Human Machine, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 399-  
401; Philip Jaisohn, “ Health, ” in Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other  
Essays, pp. 401-402.

20

. Philip Jaisohn, “ Address to the Medical Society of Seoul, ” in  
Philip Jaisohn, My Days in Korea and Other Essays, pp. 411-413. “

, 2002 12 17 .

193 ) Ibid, p. 409.

. Channing Liem, America’s Finest Gift to Korea,

가

,200 “ ”

“

” ,194

,201)

“ 가

(UNTCOK)

” ,202

“ ”

가 ,“ 가

가 ,

” ,195)

가

‘ 가 ,203)

“

,196)

“

”

” ,197)

,204

,198)

,205)

“ ”

,199)

38

194) ,“ 가? ” , p. 89. ; , p. 65; ,“

195) ,“ ” , pp. 65-66.

196) ,“ ? ” , p. 84.

197) ,“ 50 ” , p. 50; ,“

가? ” , p. 89.

198) ,“ II ” , pp. 57-59; ,“ 가 ” , p. 77, p. 79; ,“ ? ” , p. 84;

“ 가? ” , pp. 87-90.

199) ,“ II ” , pp. 57-59.

200) .

,206)

가

201) ,“ 가? ” , p. 89-90. 5·10

“ ” 가 ,“ ” 가 ,“ 1948 5 16 .

202) ,“ ” , pp. 65-66.

203) ,“ II ” , pp. 57-59.

204) ,“ 가 ” , p. 79.

205) ,“ 가? ” , pp. 89-90.

206) , p. 88.



가 ,

5 · 10

,  
207

211)

“가

”

가

212)

가  
가

“ ”

208)

1999 8 10 ,

가

,

1948 5

1,929

1,929

“가 ”

209)

’ 16

4281 (1948

) 5 21

,

5.

(歸美)

213)

1948 5 · 10 가

가

5 · 10

214)

, , , , , , ,

210) 5 · 10

2 1 1 )

1948 4 26

Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 302 .

2 1 2 ) 1948 5 16 .

2 1 3 ) DJ,

”

1999 8 16 .

1947

10

5

2 1 4 ) (Danny Choe)

5 · 10

2 0 7 ) Philip Jaisohn, “ The United Nations Commission on Korea(2), ” p. 374.

2 0 8 ) 1948 9 1 .

2 0 9 ) 1948 8 29 ; 1948 9 1 .

2 1 0 ) 1948 6 19 ; pp. 342-343;

1999), p. 204.

Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 314.

30 <sup>219</sup> 1948 6 11 ( 6 1 ),  
 1  
 , 6 18 ( 6 17 )  
 5가 3 2  
 (懇願文)

<sup>216</sup>  
 “  
 , 가 가  
 (邪路)  
 (勞)  
 ” <sup>217</sup>  
 , 6 22

2 1 5 ) <sup>216</sup> 1948 6 19 ; <sup>217</sup> pp. 342-343; , <sup>218</sup> 가  
 ( : , 1999), p. 201.  
 , 가  
 . <sup>219</sup> p. 211.  
 가  
 (首善社)  
 , 가  
 ( : , 1948) . <sup>220</sup> :  
 pp. 214-215; <sup>221</sup> :  
 , “ : ‘ , ” <sup>222</sup>  
 1994 4 7 . <sup>223</sup> 1972

2 1 6 ) <sup>224</sup> 1948 6 19 ; <sup>225</sup> pp. 342-343.  
 2 1 7 ) , <sup>226</sup> pp. 342-343.

가 가  
<sup>219</sup>  
 6 25 20  
<sup>219</sup> 7 3 ,  
<sup>220</sup>

7 4 , “  
 가 ”  
 , “  
 ”  
 “ 가 ”  
 “ , “ ”  
<sup>221</sup>

2 1 8 ) , 가 , “ ”  
 “ 가  
 3 2가 ,  
 ” . Channing Liem, America's Finest Gift to Korea, p. 78; Channing  
 Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 306.  
 2 1 9 ) , <sup>227</sup> p. 92.  
 2 2 0 ) , p. 93.  
 2 2 1 ) <sup>228</sup> 1948 7 6 . “

가

7 10

222

5 15

가

“

” “

” 223

1

224

” “

---

. Channing Liem, *America's Finest Gift to Korea*, p. 78.

가

2 (second-ranking man)

가

p. 373.

2 2 2 ) , p. 93.

2 2 3 ) 1948 5 16 .

2 2 4 ) Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 310.

가

가 ” 1 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 310.

가

225

가

가

가?

가

, 1948

가 가 “ 가

” “ , ,

가 ?” ,

“

” “ 가

” “

” 226

1948 3

---

2 2 5 ) Channing Liem, *America's Finest Gift to Korea*, pp. 80-83; Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 310; , pp. 350-351.

2 2 6 ) 1948 4 26 . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, pp. 302-304 .



가 ,  
 231)  
 가  
 232)  
 . 1948 8 28 ,  
 “ 가? ”  
 “ 가가  
 가.  
 ” 233)  
 234)  
 1948 9 2 , 55

2 3 1 )bid, pp. 308-309.  
 2 3 2 )bid  
 2 3 3 ) 1948 8 29 ; , p. 363.  
 2 3 4 )Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 308.

“ ”  
 235)  
 (從孫)  
 “ 가 가 ,  
 2 ”  
 236)  
 1948 10 (Media)  
 “ 가  
 가 ” 237)  
 (義齒)가 가,  
 가 “ ” 238)

2 3 5 ) 153 ‘가 '95 (62%),’ '3 (2%) . 1  
 , 55 , pp. 1046-1048.  
 2 3 6 ) , 2002 12 20 .  
 2 3 7 ) , 2002 12 17 .  
 2 3 8 ) 1948 8 22 , Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p.  
 311 .



가 , , 가  
 가 , 1 가  
 가 , 가  
 가 “  
 가 ” ,  
 가 가 244  
 1948 가  
 1  
 249

6. 가  
 가 , , , . 가 ,

2 4 4 )ibid, pp. 316-317.  
 “ ” , “  
 가 ” , “  
 . Ibid  
 2 4 5 )ibid, p. 321.

가 ?  
 가 ? , 50 가  
 가 ?  
 가 . 1948 9  
 2 , 55 “  
 ” 246  
 “ ” 247  
 가 ,  
 “ 가 ”  
 , “ 가 ”  
 248  
 , 가 “ 가  
 ” , 가 가

2 4 6 ) 1 , 55 , pp. 1046-1048.  
 2 4 7 ) , p. 1046.  
 2 4 8 ) .

가  
 153 (36%)  
 95 (62%)  
 3 (2%)  
 55

가?  
 가가<sup>250</sup>  
 가  
 1947  
 “ ” 3  
 “ ”  
 ”<sup>252</sup>

249) , pp. 1047-1048.  
 250) 1947 3 8 .  
 251) , “ : ( ).<sup>253</sup>  
 252) .

가 3  
 Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p. 269.  
 가 1 100 . Ibid, p. 279.

“  
 ” 가<sup>253</sup>  
 , 1 2  
 가?  
 (Dr.  
 Oakey)  
 가  
 가  
 가  
 ”<sup>254</sup>  
 , 가  
 가  
 (念)  
 1950

가 ”<sup>255</sup>  
 253) , “ ( ),<sup>256</sup> 1948 5 16 .  
 254) ,<sup>257</sup> : p. 179.  
 255) “ I am ready. ” . Channing Liem, Philip Jaisohn, p.





가 ” 262

가 ,

263

19

가 ,  
( )

가 264 가

가 ,

19 가 20 가

5 가 가 19 36

20

가 .가 가 ,

263) : 가 p. 32.

264) ( : , 1974), pp. 37-111, 118-125, 126-130, 140-152, 157-163, 167-178;

( : , 1976), 134-668; “

가 ; ( : , 1993), pp. 36-56;

“ ; ( : , 1993), pp. 67-114 .

가

가 ,

가

”

가 ,

,21

13 ,

가.

가

가2002 4 7

가 “ ,

가 . 265

265) “ (1949 )

; p. 155.



Vipin Chandra Leadership and East Asian  
Modernity

： (開化), — 19  
20  
가  
가  
(具象) (抽象)



: 『 』 ‘ 가  
가  
: 6 · 25

가

100

가

『 』

가

가

‘ (民)’

(富國)

(強兵)

가

가

가

가

: ‘ ’ ‘ ’

: “ 가가 ”

『 』

가

가

가

“ ”

가 , 가

가

가

가 Discovery of India

, ' I love India with full of dislike

);

가

가

“

”

가

『

』

15

, 15

(梁啓超)

(康有爲)

(德富蘇

峰)

....

(R. Kipling)

“

”

『 』  
가

: . ,

가

,

가

:

『 』 『 』  
』 .

가

19 , 20

. 1890

가 (George Curzon)

“ ”

가 가

(女權)

가

가

“ 가

”  
가

“  
가

4-5 가

가  
가

”

가  
”

: 20

“ . 19 , 20 ”

2

(失政) 가

: 19

가

가 가

가 가

(Ernest Satow)

가



1890

1868

1890

(反清)

(反日)

가 ,

가

“

” —

가

”

가

가

가

?

가

19

가

가

가 ?

가

, 가 가 . 가  
:  
가 가 , 가 가  
:  
가 ‘ 가 ’ , 가  
‘ 가 ’ , 가  
‘ (be) ’  
‘ (do) ’  
‘ do-it-  
yourself ’ 가  
:  
: 『 』 ” 가  
가 “ 가 . ”  
:  
가 , 가







: , 가  
 . 가  
 . 100 가 가  
 , 가 가  
 . 가 가  
 . (福澤諭吉),  
 (新渡戸稻造), (夏目  
 漱石) , 가,  
 가  
 . 가 가  
 가  
 :  
 :  
 :  
 . 가

, . 가  
 . 가  
 가 가  
 . 가  
 , “ ”  
 : 『 』 가 가 19  
 가  
 가  
 : 『 』  
 : 『 』 가 가  
 가







가 10 (袁 (小

『 』 世凱) (小

『 』 村壽太郎)가

가

『 』 1898 가 1919

.20 가

『 』 가 가

가 가 가

가 가 가

『 』 가 “ ”

가 가

1930 가

가

가

,

:

가

.

,

(新渡戸稻造)

.

,

:

가

.

,

가

(League of Nations)

가

가

가

『

』

100

‘

,

가

’

:

.

“

”“

가

가

’

”

:

가

『

』

가

가

,

가

가

: 가

“

가”

:

가 가

가

『

』

(T.

Roosevel(자)

가  
(矢内原忠雄)

가 가

:  
, 20

가

가

, 가

:

,

—

:  
가  
가

『 』

가

. 19

가

, 가

,

.

, 가

,

.

—

.... ,

‘ , ’

....

가

가

,

가

: 가 가 가  
가 ,

가 가 ,  
가 가

.

.

.

:

.

....

:

‘ peace’ P = peace, E = equality, A = ability, C = common sense, E = ethical behavior,

. 가 (common sense)

,

,

“

가

”

:

『 』

10

가

가

1898 5

가

가

가

, 19

가

100

(親)

가

19

가

, 21

가

『 』

3 · 1

(覺書)

가

--21

가

가 , ,

· “ ”  
· ‘ ’  
· ‘ ’

· ‘ ’ 가  
· ‘ ’ 가  
· ‘ ’ 가

# *Leadership and East Asian Modernity:*

*So Chae-p'il (Philip Jaisohn) in a Regional Comparative Perspective*

Vipan Chandra : |

Noted French Sociologist Gustave Lebon once wrote:

To respect tradition is a condition of existence for a people; to know how to disengage from it, a condition of progress.<sup>1)</sup>

These words encapsulate the dilemma that change-oriented leaders and groups face in all societies with deep historical roots. The dilemma is rendered especially acute if such a society finds itself confronting challenges to its very survival. From mid-to-late-19<sup>th</sup>-century, China, Japan, and Korea all experienced this challenge in varying degrees of intensity and tried to develop responses that would help them move toward what came to be called variously as “advancement,” “civilization,” “enlightenment,” “power and prosperity,” and “progress.” At the same time, they

---

1) Quoted in Claude E. Welch, Jr., “Comparative Study of Political Modernization,” in Claude E. Welch, Jr., ed., *Political Modernization* (Belmont, CA: Wadsworth, 1967), p. 9.

groped for ways that would preserve their independence, territorial integrity and distinctive identity.

The full story of these responses is beyond the scope of this essay, which is limited to the years 1895-1905. Suffice it to say here that in the years leading up to 1895 and even more rapidly afterwards, it was Japan that attained the greatest, albeit troublesome success in the pursuit of its goals. China and Korea, despite some notable reforms, found themselves in increasingly precarious situations, caused both by external and domestic factors, complicated in particular by the rising power and aggressive ambition of Japan itself. This paper will take the year 1895 as its point of departure and will offer a comparative East Asian context for the contributions of So Chae-p'il (Philip Jaisohn) to Korea's transformation during the subsequent ten years.<sup>2)</sup> I will attempt to meet this overall objective by breaking it down into three sub-objectives. First, I will examine and evaluate the new thinkers and activists who tried to shape events in China toward the desired goals of national survival, strength, prosperity and reform. The ideas and actions of K'ang Yu-wei, T'an Ssu-t'ung, Liang Ch'i-chao, Yen Fu and Ch'iu Chin will form the chief focus of this endeavor. The aim here is not to give an exhaustive narrative but an illustrative one.

I have chosen to exclude Tsou Jung and Sun Yat-sen, two very impor-

tant figures who also emerged in this period, for my essay on the whole seeks to examine the ideas and work of reformists, not revolutionaries. Tsou and Sun were committed to the overthrow of the Ch'ing throne, the abolition of monarchy as an institution, and the establishment of a republic. The figures included in this essay largely remained, despite some revolutionary utterances and some rare and marginal flirtations with violent moves against perceived enemies, reformists within the existing order, even if one attaches the adjective "radical" to their brand of reformism. The one true exception to this standard in my essay is Ch'iu Chin, who was executed in 1907 for her involvement in a violent anti-Ch'ing conspiracy. However, she is included not because of that role but for her passionate voice on women's issues. It is imperative for today's scholars to broaden and enrich historical understanding by adding the less conventional perspectives of women and other neglected groups, wherever possible.

Next, this paper will present the visions that shaped the public discourse and events in Japan during the same period. Again, this will be done with the help of a few representative examples. Ito Hirobumi from the government, Okuma Shigenobu from the mainstream opposition, the Christian reformist Uchimura Kanzo, leaders of the suppressed Social Democratic Party, the radical socialist Kotoku Shusui and the celebrated feminist writer and activist Yosano Akiko will provide a cross-section of the Japanese views. There were, of course, numerous other voices, male and female in this period—some carryovers from previous decades and some new to the late 1890s and early 1900s. They should certainly be

---

2) In this essay I have used the McCure-Reischauer system of romanization for Korean, the Wade-Giles system for Chinese and the Hepburn system for Japanese. Spellings outside these systems are retained only for places and names long familiar to all East Asianists: Tokyo, Seoul, Peking, Sun Yat-sen, Fukien, Chekiang, Kiangsu, Canton, Foochow, etc.

part of a more comprehensive analysis.<sup>3)</sup> To reiterate, however, this essay does not aim for such comprehensiveness; it only seeks careful illustrations for comparative purposes. It should also be mentioned here that during this period even the most vehement critics of the Japanese state in our sample preferred the printed and spoken word over violent radicalism to propagate their concepts of change. (Kotoku Shusui did eventually turn toward revolutionary anarchism, but that shift occurred only after 1910.)

Finally, this paper will highlight the main ideas and activities of So Chaep'il and, where relevant, his chief associates, especially Yun Ch'ih-o and offer comparisons between him and the Chinese and Japanese figures. Since my fellow contributors in this volume thoroughly examine many specific dimensions of So Chae-pil's role in Korea, I propose to use broad strokes rather than meticulous detail for my comparative observations.

## CHINA: MODERNIZATION and RADICAL REFORMISM

Perhaps no other event in late 19<sup>th</sup>-century China caused as much a sense of national crisis and anguish among the country's patriots as the Sino-Japanese War (1894-1895) and the Shimonoseki Treaty that brought it

---

3) For two very good sources, among many, on other thinkers and activists, see Sharon L. Sievers, *Flowers in Salt: The Beginnings of Feminist Consciousness in Modern Japan* (Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1983); and Joseph Pittau, S.J., *Political Thought in Early Meiji Japan, 1869-1889* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1969).

to a conclusion. All prior national humiliations since the First Opium War (1839-1842) in the form of unequal treaties, loss of territory, and indemnities paled in comparison to the stunning impact of this war. As the victor, Japan gained Taiwan and the Pescadores as a colony and a 200-million tael indemnity. At first, Japan also obtained the Liaotung Peninsula of southern Manchuria, but then, in a further demonstration of the raw imperialism of the era, Russia, Germany and France forced Japan to return the area to Chinese sovereignty. (During the next four years these European powers would proceed, by intimidation and blandishments, to wrest yet more concessions from China in areas "vital" to their "interests." This predatory imperialist scramble for concessions and "spheres of influence" to many Chinese patriots would become an ominous portent of their country's remaining power and dignity being soon "cut up like a melon.")<sup>4)</sup>

Clearly, the much-heralded program of "self-strengthening" (*tzu-ch'iang*) of the years 1861-1894, that had sought to wed traditional Chinese cultural values and socio-political institutions to selected aspects of modern Western science, technology, industry and commerce, had failed to protect China from the naked designs of imperialism. That a small, developed, well-organized, expansionist and determined neighbor like Japan would join this sordid hunt and impudently make China prostrate before Tokyo's newly-acquired military might was an unprecedented insult to

---

4) For details, see Immanuel C.Y. Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, Fifth Edition (New York and London: Oxford University Press, 1995), pp. 344-350.



Chinese sensibilities. After all, wasn't Japan an ancient beneficiary of China's gifts of high culture?

While high Ch'ing officials such as Chang Chih-tung continued to assert that the existing self-strengthening formula of *t'i-yung* ("Chinese learning for [moral] fundamentals, Western learning for [utilitarian] application") was still a sound and workable solution to China's ills,<sup>5)</sup> several new men emerged with the conviction that more thoroughgoing reforms were urgently called for, under which the country's age-old moral tenets and socio-political institutions would also have to be reexamined, altered or abandoned in emulation of the models of "success" such as Japan and the Western nations. To be sure, the new men were eager to salvage from traditional Chinese civilization assets that gave China its distinctive identity and pride, but choosing them and reconciling them with reform was not easy. Still, this quest did produce some radically fresh visions and actions for national survival. K'ang Yu-wei (1858-1927), T'an Ssu-t'ung (1865-98), Liang Ch'i-chao (1873-1929), Yen Fu (1853-1921), and Ch'iu Chin (1875-1907) represented this trend, marking a departure from the superficial and failed version of self-strengthening.

K'ang had been born into a well-to-do and prominent gentry-official family of Nanhai, Kwangt'ung, and underwent the usual classical education to prepare for a traditional bureaucratic career. Several events, how-

---

5) On Chang Chih-tung, see Wm. Theodore DeBary, Wing-Tsit Chan, and Chester Tan, ed. *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2 (New York and London: Columbia University Press, 1960), pp. 81-87.

ever, put him on a life-altering course. After much study and reflection K'ang early on developed the notion that he was destined to be a new "sage" and savior of China. The poverty and degradation of the common people and the corruption, incompetence and weakness of the state, already evident, became more vivid for him by his visits to Hong Kong, Peking and Shanghai, especially Shanghai's foreign-governed districts. The foreign-controlled areas had organized and effective municipal institutions, neatness, prosperity and a constant movement toward further betterment. After deeper exposure to Western ideas through a Peking study group called *Society for the Study of Self-Strengthening* (*Ch'iang-hsueh hui*) with Christian missionary connections, K'ang began to develop his own concepts of reform.<sup>6)</sup> The Society's Christian leaders, such as Rev. Young J. Allen and Rev. Timothy Richard, had moved away from a strictly religious mission to a more secular one of disseminating knowledge about the broader western civilization. As Rev. Richard once humorously remarked, whereas formerly the emphasis had been on "saving the heathen from the sufferings of hell," the new concern was "to save the heathen from the hell of suffering in the world."<sup>7)</sup> K'ang's intellectual and

---

6) I am indebted to the following works for drawing my portrait of K'ang:

Immanuel C.Y. Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*; Jonathan D. Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace: The Chinese and Their Revolutions, 1895-1980* (New York: Penguin Books, 1981); and DeBary, Chan and Tan, *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2. Also see, Jean Chesneaux, Marianne Bastid, and Marie-Claire Bergère, *China: From the Opium Wars to the 1911 Revolution* (New York: 1976), pp. 309-315.

7) Quoted in Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, p. 357.

political growth was fast, and he soon became a founder or co-founder of several study societies, schools and newspapers of his own in Hunan, Kiangsu, Kwangt'ung and Peking. K'ang also became a prolific speaker and writer through these and other forums. His sharp mind and personal charisma inspired many bright young men, notably T'an and Liang, to seek his mentorship.

K'ang articulated his own vision of "progress" through a series of provocative writings beginning with the tract, *Confucius as a Reformer* (*K'ung-tzu kai-chih kao*) a work that he had begun in 1886 but finished and published in 1897. In it he showed the fundamental problem of China being a distorted and historically inauthentic understanding of Confucianism as an ideology opposed to progress. This false grasp of the teachings of Confucius was what led to a fear of, and hostility to, change in the name of venerating the way of the sages, even when change was a categorical imperative for strength and survival. Through a close reading of what K'ang insisted was the "correct," as opposed to the prevailing counterfeit, version of Confucian texts, he presented Confucius as a progress-oriented teacher who wanted ideas and institutions to evolve in accord with the distinct context and needs of each era. K'ang argued that instead of clinging to some hackneyed and putatively immutable interpretation of Confucianism, China should listen to the true, dynamic intent of Confucius that he had reconstructed. This true "way" of Confucius had envisioned three ages in a sequential fashion: The Age of Disorder, the Age of Order and Ascending Peace, and the Age of Great Community

and Grand Peace (*t'ai'ping*). The course of humanity progresses through this fixed process. Tribes lead to nations and nations will inevitably lead to a universal order of unity, happiness and tranquility. Similarly, forms of government autocracy, constitutionalism and republicanism inexorably follow from each other, and human relationships show an identical pattern. Unbridled individualism leads to a structured hierarchy, which itself leads to better, more spontaneous individual relationships informed by universal benevolence (*jen*) in the Age of Great Unity and Universal Peace. Evolution is the law of nature, which can be perceived even in such simple reality as a child growing into adulthood and old age, or a sprout becoming a tree.

Confucius, according to K'ang, celebrated this law of evolution. Born in the Age of Disorder, he naturally extolled those rules and institutions that would assist the advent of order. They were specific to a chaotic society, not meant to be valid for the present age, which, due to advancing communications, was rapidly moving toward order and would eventually create a global commonwealth of fraternity and friendship. K'ang asserted that, logically, the methods and institutions appropriate for the Age of Great Community and Grand Peace would have done as much harm in the Age of Disorder as those meant for the Age of Disorder were doing to the present Age of Order. Independence, self-rule, constitutional government and reformed laws were a proper response to the present age and would be in consonance with the far-sighted wisdom of Confucius. This "true" Confucianism should make China a strong and prosperous state; it even deserved to be formally pro-

claimed as the national “religion” of the country.<sup>8)</sup>

In a more private, tightly guarded work titled *Ta-t'ung shu* (“The Book of Great Community”), which was begun in 1886 but completed in 1902 during K'ang's pleasant sojourn in the salubrious Himalayan city of Darjeeling, India, he fleshed out the specifics of the Great Community and Grand Peace. In this utopian world of the future “there would be no national, provincial and [racial] barriers. Government would virtually cease to exist except in local units fixed arbitrarily on the basis of square degrees of longitude and latitude. Within these units life would be completely communal and completely egalitarian...[and] in place of the differentiated loyalties, i.e., the hierarchical duties and obligations of Confucian orthodoxy which had bound men to their particular social group, there would be only an undifferentiated feeling of human kindness or love [i.e., the preeminent Confucian virtue of *jen*]”<sup>9)</sup>

This cosmopolitan order, for which K'ang claimed he drew his ideas from a “deep” study of the intellectual heritage of his homeland as well as India, Greece, Persia, Rome, and modern England, France, Germany and America, would end all suffering and sorrow, especially those stemming from oppressive human practices such as caste differences, the existing marriage and family arrangements, slavery, rigid gender roles, and similar

---

8) Quoted in Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, pp. 364-365; DeBary, Chan, and Tan, *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 60-73; Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace*, pp. 29-78.

9) DeBary, Chan and Tan, *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 66-67.

other autocratic and feudal customs. A democratic parliament would lightly oversee a global federation of self-governing units bound by a common language designed by musicians and philosophers. Living in an arms-free world, all people would have conception-to-death care under a localized socialist dispensation that would leave no room for anyone to fall through the cracks, so to speak. K'ang's views on the maltreatment of women and his proposals on marriage and human sexuality merit extended citation here because of his impassioned critique and astonishing liberalism.<sup>10)</sup> As Jonathan Spence in his absorbing study of China's search for a modern identity points out, there is “no finer passage” on women in the *Ta-t'ung shu* than the following:

In the more than ten thousand years of human history, taking all nations of the whole earth together, incalculable, inconceivable numbers of people have had human form and human intelligence; moreover, each man has had some woman with whom he was most intimate, whom he loved the most. Yet men have callously and unscrupulously repressed women, restrained them, deceived them, shut them up, imprisoned them, bound them. Men have prevented them from being independent, from holding public office, from being officials, from living as citizens, from enjoying participation in public meetings. Still worse, men have not let them study, or hold discussions, or make a name for themselves, or have free social intercourse, or enjoy entertainments, or go out sightseeing, or leave the house. And worse even than that, men have forced them to distort and

---

10) Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace*, pp. 67-71.

bind their waists, veil their faces, compress their feet, and tattoo their bodies. The guiltless have been universally oppressed, the innocent universally punished. Such actions have been worse than the worst inhumanity. And yet throughout the world, past and present, for thousands of years, those whom we call good men, righteous men, have been accustomed to the sight of such things, have sat and looked and considered them to be matters of course, have not demanded justice for the victims or offered to help them. This is the most appalling, unjust, and unequal thing, the most inexplicable theory under heaven.

I now have a task: to cry out the natural grievances of the incalculable numbers of women in the past. I now have one great desire: to save the eight hundred million women of my own time from drowning in the sea of suffering. I now have a great longing: to bring the incalculable inconceivable numbers of women of the future the happiness of equality, of the Great Community and of independence.<sup>11)</sup>

As for marriage and sexuality, K'ang makes even the most progressive 21<sup>st</sup>-century social reformists look like bashful and timid tinkerers. To quote Spence again:

To achieve the equality that K'ang saw as the ultimate goal, the Great Community would insist on everyone's having absolute equality before the law in elections, in education, and in holding office-though women must have served in the Human Roots Institution, in the child-rearing institu-

tions, or in one of the old-age institutions before holding office. Men and women would dress identically at all public functions, to avoid unnatural discriminations. When education was completed, at the age of twenty, any man or woman could undertake a marriage contract-such contracts could not be for less than a month or for more than a year, though they could be renewed. Homosexuals would also be permitted to sign such contracts with one another. Aware that highly educated and happily employed women might choose not to have children, thus threatening the eventual survival of the species, K'ang urged that everything possible be done to make their pregnancies pleasant and fulfilling: as well as having a beautiful environment they might have lovers in the early stages of pregnancy and use mechanical pleasure devices after delivery if they so chose. In the Great Community, the universality of desire would be recognized.<sup>12)</sup>

It wasn't K'ang's utopian vision, however, that drew Chinese patriots toward him. It was his apprehension about the prospect of China's imminent fall under the weight of marauding foreign powers (inexplicably, in the Age of Order and Ascending Peace!) that built the critical bridge between him and them. K'ang expressed this apprehension with an eloquence that relied on vivid and cascading metaphors. In a speech given in 1897 to a group of fellow intellectuals, he thundered:

We live in a house that is about to collapse, a boat which, leaking badly, is about to topple over. We are on a pile of firewood which has already caught fire; indeed our position is no better than that of a bird in a cage, a

---

11) *Ibid.*, p. 72

---

12) *Ibid.*, pp. 72-73

fish in a frying pan, or a prisoner in a cell. We are treated like slaves; no, we are treated [as] worse than slaves. We are treated like horses and cattle or dogs and sheep that are to be pushed around as our masters please, or cut into pieces whenever they so choose. ... The decline of our sage's teachings and the impending extermination of the very life of the nation - how can any tragedy be more painful than this one?

K'ang warned that the tragic path of Burma [now Myanmar], Annam [now Vietnam], India and Poland would be China's unless "you and me, the intellectuals who have not expressed our righteous anger and who in fact have remained undisturbed" stand up and "arouse and enhance our will power ... [for] a prairie fire begins with the striking of a single match, and every river originates from a trickle."<sup>13</sup>

K'ang's spirited nationalism was shared in full measure by both T'an and Liang, although each also contributed his own distinctive voice to the reformist discourse of the period. The fate of each became inextricably tied to that of K'ang, T'an's more tragically than Liang's. The non-conformist son of a high state official, T'an was born in the province of Hunan, known both for its general conservatism and its role as a hotbed of fiery rebelliousness. (In 1893, Hunan gave birth to Mao Tse-tung, and in the late 1920s it was to be the testing ground of his "a revolution-is-no-tea-party"-type violent activism). As a young man T'an is said to have loved independent study;

---

13) Quoted in Ranbir Vohra, ed., *The Chinese Revolution: 1900-1950* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1974), pp. 2-3, 11.

his eclectic interests covered Confucianism, Taoism and Buddhism, Christianity, Western civilization, poetry, mathematics, the martial arts, and China's modernization. An articulate analyst, T'an displayed a hot-tempered, almost reckless courage and zeal for change by openly calling for an end to Manchu rule, the monarchy and the orthodox Confucian ethics, and for the establishment of a republic. In his most important work, *The Study of Humanity (Jen-hsueh)*, published in 1898, the concept of *jen* is less evocative of Confucius than of another ancient philosopher, Mo Tzu, who advocated universal love as the highest virtue. T'an's views are also closer to those of Buddhist "compassion" and Christian "charity" as well as the French Revolution's slogan of "liberty, equality and fraternity."

T'an completely repudiated the four hierarchical Confucian relationships of father-son, husband-wife, elder brother-younger brother, and ruler-subject on grounds of being oppressive and inhumane, and wished to retain only the fifth one, the friend-friend tie, as a model for all human interactions. Distinctions of high and low among human beings, all "children of Heaven and Earth," were unnatural and based on a deliberate misrepresentation by self-serving men of the teaching of Confucius. Like K'ang, T'an asserted that hierarchical ties were fit, to an extent, only for the Age of Disorder, but successive Chinese rulers, especially of "barbarian" Manchu and Mongol stock, had turned them into tools of tyranny. Looking back to "the beginning of the human race," when all human beings were equal and only for the sake of convenience chose one from

amongst themselves to perform the function of a ruler, T'an stressed that the ruler was a creation of the people, not of Heaven. Hence he was accountable to them and could be unseated by them. The ties between a ruler and the people should be informed by mutual loyalty and mutual care, not by inequality that enslaved the people's bodies and souls. A typical illustration of this oppressive inequality, T'an pointed out, was the set of Confucian rules about the husband-wife relationship, in which the former lorded over the latter with unfair, one-sided and "absurd" rules of duty, chastity and divorce governing female conduct.<sup>14)</sup> The only relationship worth salvaging from Confucianism was that between friends, for it was based on "equality, liberty and mutual feelings." While the relationship between brothers was potentially closer to friendship, it too had become darkened by the "three bonds" like "hell." Friendship should, therefore, be the model for all human relationships.

The typhoon and volcano-like impact on educated Chinese that Liang once attributed to K'ang could just as well characterize the social and political egalitarianism of T'an.<sup>15)</sup> Still, despite his anti-Manchu animus and his republican bent, T'an gravitated toward K'ang's more restrained approach for immediate goals. The mutual accord and collabo-

---

14) DeBary, Chan, and Tan, *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 87-91. Here T'an was clearly also alluding to the infamous seven grounds—adultery, insubordination to in-laws, jealousy, disease, theft, gossipy nature, and inability to produce a male heir on which a wife could be divorced, and the practice of honoring a widow's self-immolation as a mark of "virtue."

15) *Ibid.*, p. 91.

ration between them seems to have cemented their resolve for reform from "within the system," as it were.

To this resolve Liang added his own youthful enthusiasm and budding intellect. This youngest and closest associate of K'ang also was the scion of a scholarly Kwangtung family, and after a classical education became interested in Western political theories and practices. He worked with K'ang in the Peking activities of the afore-mentioned Society for the Study of Self-Strengthening. He also traveled to Hunan, studied its reformist trends, met T'an, and for a short time served as an instructor at Changsha's School of Current Affairs (*Shih-wu Hsüeh-t'ang*). Moving to Shanghai, he became the editor of *Current Affairs Gazette* (*Shih-wu Pao*).<sup>16)</sup> Still, during 1896-1898 Liang's association with K'ang and T'an was perhaps more that of an acolyte than of a peer. It was only after 1898 that Liang blossomed as a leading reformist in his own right (We shall return to Liang soon).

Yen Fu seems to have had no direct connection to K'ang, T'an or Liang, but as a much older writer on Western civilization, he no doubt played an indirect role in shaping their ideas, especially Liang's. Son of a Fukien gentry family, he first enrolled at the naval academy of the Foochow Dockyard, from where he was sent to England in 1876 for a two-year study of Western civilization. Upon his return he served for many years as a junior official in the well-known statesman Li Hung-

---

16) Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, p. 368; Chesneaux, Bastid, and Bergere, *China: From the Opium Wars to the 1911 Revolution*, p. 317.

chang's Peiyang Academy in Tientsin, but never quite felt his qualifications fully recognized by his boss. The Sino-Japanese War disturbed and galvanized his mind in the same way it did those of other patriots, and he decided to move to the independent world of scholarship and journalism aimed at awakening his readers to what he believed was the "real" secret of Western wealth and power. He was convinced that without that key China would not be able to save itself. An avid student of the writings of Adam Smith, Charles Darwin, Herbert Spencer, J.S. Mill, T.H. Huxley, Edward Jenk, and Baron de Montesquieu, he first introduced their views to China through his essays in the prestigious Tientsin journal *Kuo-wen Pao* ("National Review") when he assumed its editorship in 1897. Between 1898-1909, he also published his book-length translations of their major works.<sup>17)</sup>

Yen's examination of such works and the Western world in general led him to conclude that there was an all-encompassing difference between Chinese and Western world-views. He saw thought, morality and institutions as inseparable parts of an organic whole, and in the absence of adopting this holistic approach to change over the fallacious *t'i-yung* formula, China's search for wealth, power and survival would remain a will-o'-the-wisp or a wild-goose chase. A brand new, Western-type conceptualization of the relationship between the individual and the community would have to be integrated into the Chinese psyche, replac-

ing the established values of passivity, conformity and control. As Benjamin Schwartz, in his seminal study, *In Search of Wealth and Power: Yen Fu and the West*, points out, Yen attributed China's weakness to the lack of the "Faustian-Promethean character of the West." He became convinced that the energies which account for the West's development "are stored up in the individual and that these energies can be realized only in an environment favorable to individual interests. He believed that the West has exalted human energy in all its manifestations intellectual, moral and physical. It has identified spirit not with passivity and withdrawal but with energy and assertion. The West has discovered the unlimited nature of human capacities and has fearlessly proceeded to actualize human potentialities undreamed of in traditional Chinese culture. ... [Dynamism], struggle, [competition, evolution], purposive action, energy, assertiveness, and the realization of all potentialities [are the salient marks of Western civilization]." To Yen, Western industrialism, political and legal systems, and military organization were "merely the more obvious manifestations of these values." They were "products of a culture that through liberty, equality (above all, equality of opportunity), and democracy provides the environment within which the individual's energy ... is finally liberated."

Despite his heavy stress on the Social Darwinian aspects of the West in conjunction with liberty, equality and democracy, Yen, like K'ang and Darwin himself, envisioned a future global state of peace in which all struggle would cease to exist and "welfare, freedom, and every other value

---

17) Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, pp. 421-425.

will prevail in a state of utopian equilibrium.” Before that dreamland could arrive, however, individual nations would have to harness the untapped energy of all their citizens for their own society’s collective strength, growth and development.<sup>18)</sup> K’ang’s own 1897 speech, cited earlier, echoed this theme of seeking and utilizing the latent human energy, but by drawing an analogy from the physical “heat” of life. “Heat alone,” K’ang argued, “generates growth, luxuriance, expansion, and mobility, while coldness causes shrinkage, weathering, decay, and finally, extinction.”<sup>19)</sup>

There was, thus, an intellectual kinship between Yen and K’ang. Yen, in addition to being older, spoke from direct personal experiences in England. K’ang and his disciples, on the other hand, had not yet traveled to the West, and so probably found Yen’s voice compelling, as did many other reformists and revolutionists of China. Yet, with all his celebration of Western liberalism, Yen extolled individual energy and rights less as an end than as a means for enlarging the state’s power and wealth. “Energy” was to be actualized more for the purpose of contributing to the “community” and less for the sake of individual fulfillment as such. Thus, Yen’s patriotic concerns paradoxically shifted the Western liberal tradition from its original aim toward a collectivist end.<sup>20)</sup>

It was in this kind of milieu of doom and gloom combined with the

heady wine of faith in the efficacy of new ideas that K’ang took action to “save” China. A relentless writer of communications to the throne, in 1895 he had already created a stir in Peking when he and Liang mobilized between six hundred and a thousand fellow metropolitan examination candidates to co-sign an emotional memorial of almost 18,000 characters unsuccessfully requesting the rejection of the Shimonoseki Treaty.<sup>21)</sup> Yet K’ang kept sending memorials to Emperor Kuang-hsu on the urgent need for reform. In early and mid-1898, with the help of a “progressive” high official, K’ang finally gained two direct audiences with the Emperor, who had earlier shown an interest in K’ang’s ideas. “May [Your Majesty] adopt the heart of Peter the Great of Russia and the administration of Meiji Japan,” K’ang had pleaded in the memorial leading up to these meetings.<sup>22)</sup> In the second of these meetings, K’ang drove home to the Emperor his idea of reform as a multi-sided yet inter-connected and systemic enterprise. K’ang likened the endeavor to “a large building that, because its timbers have decayed, is about to fall down. If some patches are made to cover up the cracks, then as soon as there is a storm the building will collapse. It is therefore necessary to dismantle the building and build anew if we want something strong and dependable. To lay a foundation, the area of the land, the height of the building to be constructed,

---

18) This summary of Schwartz’s study is drawn from Franz Schurmann and Orville Schell, ed., *Imperial China* (New York: Vintage Books, 1967), pp. 282-292.

19) Vohra, *the Chinese Revolution*, p. 10.

20) See Schwartz in Schurmann and Schell, *Imperial China*, p. 292.

---

21) Jonathan Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace*, p. 36; and Immanuel C-Y Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, 367. The two sources give different figures for those co-signing the memorial.

22) Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, p. 369.



the number of bricks and tiles, the sizes of windows, doors, and balustrades, the amount of plaster, nails, bamboo, and other items must all be planned and estimated as parts of the overall design before purchasing the materials and hiring the laborers... If any one part of the general plan is neglected, the building ... cannot resist a storm.”<sup>23)</sup>

Carrying his penchant for vividness further, K’ang argued that in the absence of widespread changes in government personnel attempts at reform would fail, for that would be like “climbing a tree to catch fish.”<sup>24)</sup> At the Emperor’s request, K’ang also gave him his essays on reform in Germany, France, and England and on the partition of Poland. Impressed by K’ang’s acumen and passionate patriotism, the Emperor appointed him as a secretary in the Tsungli Yamen (the Foreign Office). Through further communications K’ang then laid out a concrete plan for the political bureaucratic, military, economic and educational modernization of the country. The plan included proposals for the founding of a parliament and a national assembly, for the separation of powers among the three branches of government, and for the bureaucratic, economic, military, and educational modernization of the country. Impressed even more, the Emperor now decided to lend his support to K’ang and proclaim, in the words of historian Immanuel Hsu, China’s own “New Deal” (*hsin-cheng*) through a spate of edicts reminiscent of many of the Meiji reforms and Korea’s

---

23) Spence, *the Gate of Heavenly Peace*, p. 49.

24) *Ibid.*

Kabo-Ulmi (1894-1895) reforms.<sup>25)</sup>

To prepare for the implementation of reforms, Liang was made head of a translation bureau, and T’an and Lin Tsü, another K’ang disciple, were appointed as high-level secretaries to the Grand Council. Bypassing the Grand Councilors, K’ang and his associates drafted all decrees and presented them as being in accord with the best Chinese and Western principles of serving the well-being of the people; they were specifically designed to introduce the “rich and varied contents” of Western political systems toward this end. From June 11 through September, 1898, Emperor Kuang-hsu issued between 40 and 50 reform decrees, earning this flood the nickname “A Hundred Days of Reform.” The traditional “eight-legged” essay in the civil-service examinations was replaced by essays on current affairs, an Imperial University on modern lines was ordered established in Peking, the provinces were to have modern schools for both Chinese and Western learning, and traditional and privately-run Confucian academies and local religious temples were to be transformed into a system of modern colleges, high schools and elementary schools. A modern medical school under the Imperial University, an official newspaper, a special examination in political economy, and the sending of students and officials abroad for study were the other components of the educational reform package. Presumably because of their educational role, Christian missions were to be given state protection.

---

25) Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, p. 372-374.

The decrees also abolished those well-established government offices that were now deemed superfluous and dysfunctional in the multiplicity of their duties and their padded compensations. "Progressives" were to be appointed to important positions, and private individuals were invited to suggest improvements in administration. The law codes were to be simplified, and a modern budget system was to be instituted for national financial management. The capital was to be beautified, inventions were to be encouraged, railway construction was to be accelerated, and new government bureaus were to be set up to promote modern agriculture, industry and commerce. The armed forces, including the navy, were to be revitalized by modern equipment and training methods. Eventually, local assemblies and a national parliament were to be created for wider popular participation in government.<sup>26)</sup> Thus, the reforms sought to build a modern state by greatly redesigning and rebuilding the ill-conceived existing edifice of self-strengthening.

Neither the Emperor nor the K'ang group were, however, fully aware of their vulnerability to the anti-reformist elements in the government. Before the ink was dry on the reform edicts, Empress Dowager Tzu-hsi, the power behind the throne, mobilized both Manchu and Chinese officials with a vested interest in the established order and struck back. The Emperor was cut off from any contact with the reformists, most of the decrees were quashed, and K'ang and his colleagues were

ordered arrested. K'ang and Liang escaped to Hong Kong and Japan, respectively, but T'an, K'ang's younger brother Kuang-jen, and four other reformist officials were captured and executed. T'an, in fact, refused to flee when he had a chance by declaring that one should be willing to sacrifice one's life for the lofty cause of "revolution." Many other reformist officials were stripped of their ranks or posts, imprisoned or sent into banishment. Most of the reforms were thus over in a flash.<sup>27)</sup>

The fundamental weakness of K'ang's approach to reform was its exclusive reliance on a rather precarious throne and a coterie of reformists. There was neither broad bureaucratic or military support nor any well-cultivated popular constituency behind this enterprise. The passionate idealism of K'ang's writings notwithstanding, nowhere in his words does one find a resounding testament of faith in the inherent capacity of ordinary Chinese to take charge of their own destiny. They were only to be the beneficiaries of a top-down method of change, which, remarkably, showed little interest in developing a national land reform and the ending of excessive rents and usurious money-lending practices. Yet, they were the most pressing problems of China's peasantry. As a result, K'ang and Liang were now reduced to living their lives in exile; they now spoke and wrote from their safe havens on foreign soils, although both also toyed with poorly-hatched violent schemes against reactionary Ch'ing officials.

K'ang now became a restless, inveterate explorer of the world.

---

26) *Ibid.*, 375-376.

---

27) *Ibid.*

Supported in his global peregrinations by the largesse of overseas admirers, he took on the role of a peripatetic champion of constitutional monarchy.<sup>28)</sup> Liang moved along a more zigzag path. The Boxer Rebellion of 1899-1900, which reconfirmed the ineptness of the Chinese government, the folly of the patriotic yet obscurantist and destructive groups like the Boxers, the continued predatory and vindictive behavior of foreign powers in the wake of the Rebellion, and another victory on the part of modernized Japan, this time over Russia, all obviously had an impact on Liang. Earlier, a visit to Canada and America had opened for him yet new perspectives on both collective and individual human behavior. From all this stimulation and from further study, Liang fashioned new and uncertain personal responses to China's unending crisis. He shifted his position from a guarded espousal of constitutional monarchy to a vague hope for a "Cromwell-like" autocrat to change the nation. But then, after the revolutionists under Sun Yat-sen's inspiration toppled the Ch'ing Dynasty and the monarchy and established the Chinese Republic in 1912, Liang accepted the Republic as an unalterable fact and argued against further revolutions; he championed gradual reform, for, as he pointed out, while "the path of progress leads to more progress, the path of revolution only leads to more revolution."<sup>29)</sup>

---

28) See Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace*, pp. 94-108.

In 1917 he even took part in a futile plot to restore the Ch'ing monarch under the deposed boy emperor Puyi.

29) Schurmann and Schell, *Imperial China*, p. 298.

During 1902-1905, however, Liang devoted most of his time to editing and publishing a fortnightly journal from Yokohama titled *The New People's Miscellany* (*Hsin-min T'sung-pao*). Addressing mostly expatriate Chinese, Liang dedicated himself to revitalizing China by suggesting ways of "renovating the people." He wrote on the rise and fall of nations, the lives and careers of Cromwell, Voltaire, Kant, and the broad institutions, values and practices of the West. To prevent undue infatuation with the West, he reminded his readers of the racism and the great inequalities of wealth in America, but he also admiringly cited the American people's organizational skills, efficiency, civic mindedness, nationalist spirit, neatness, individualism, dignity, independence, purposiveness, competitiveness, and enterprising outlook. The Western tendency to seek healthy compromises, their commitment to education and to democratic institutions also received praise from Liang. He bluntly asserted that, by contrast, the Chinese people were not yet ready for freedom, constitutionalism and republicanism. A new kind of Chinese personality would first have to be developed, free from narrow clannishness, inefficiency, disorder, pomposity, and the habit of bowing and scraping to authority figures, and a new national solidarity would have to replace local and sectarian loyalties. The Chinese, Liang suggested, would thus have to develop the values and sensibilities of "citizenship" under a new national awareness of collective destiny. Otherwise, democratic concepts like freedom, constitutionalism and republicanism would lead to a "national suicide," for that would be "as ill-suited as hampen clothes in

the winter and furs in the summer.”<sup>30)</sup> He never really offered a concrete plan about the hows of reorienting the people’s character, but the theme itself remained Liang’s chief focus in the pre-Republican years.

Meanwhile, the spotlight had been stolen from K’ang and Liang by the revolutionists, as noted above. Belatedly, the Ch’ing government tried to stem the tide of revolutionary trends by an about-face on the reforms of 1898. Between 1905-1911 it offered a reform package to the country that even went beyond those of the K’ang group.<sup>31)</sup> The republican stirrings were gathering momentum, however, and they would not be satisfied by anything less than the destruction of the Imperial system. While the revolutionary actions for a republic are not part of this paper’s focus, the ideas of at least one woman involved in those efforts are relevant to our discussion, not only to expose another blind spot in the vision field of K’ang but also to introduce the incipient feminism of China in an era of great upheavals. That remarkable woman was Ch’iu Chin.

In spite of K’ang’s role in organizing the anti-footbinding movement and his fervent words for women’s emancipation and gender equality words that were echoed, if less eloquently, by both T’an and Liang he saw no inconsistency in having a concubine when his first wife was still with him, nor in taking a 17-year old consort when he was 49!<sup>32)</sup> Thus,

---

30) DeBary, Chan, and Tan, *Sources of Chinese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 91-99, and Patricia B.

Ebrey, *Chinese Civilization and Society* (New York: The Free Press, 1993), pp. 335-340.

31) See Hsu, *The Rise of Modern China*, pp. 408-412.

32) Spence, *the Gate of Heavenly Peace*, p. 96, p. 108.

one might see in the public and personal aspects of K’ang’s life the same kind of gap that Mao Tse-tung later displayed between his own early public feminism and later private sexual exploitation of even younger women. Hence, authentic concepts of male-female equality could emerge only with the joining of women’s own voices to men’s. The voice of Ch’iu Chin was an anguished, fearless and full-throated expression of such authenticity.

A Chekiang native who was forced to marry a Hunanese merchant, intellectually Ch’iu Chin was a product of one of the growing but still small number of modern girls schools in the coastal provinces and of new books, magazines and newspapers covering issues central to women’s lives. Well-acquainted with the life stories of Mme. Roland, Sofya Perovskaya, and Catherine Beecher as well as with those of many heroic women from China’s own past, Ch’iu Chin experienced her own “the-personal-becomes-political” transformation. Maltreatment by a tyrannical husband and observations of women’s plight in general turned her into a scathing critic of China’s misogynist family and social structure.<sup>33)</sup> She also linked this critique, like many other progressives, to China’s desperate national situation. Thus, her feminism and nationalism were the twin products of her modern consciousness. In a 1904 essay Ch’iu gave vent to this consciousness with courageous candor, pain and anger:

---

33) *Ibid.*, pp. 83-84.

We, the two hundred million women of China, are the most unfairly treated objects on this earth. If we have a decent father, then we will be all right at the time of our birth; but if he is crude by nature, or an unreasonable man, he will immediately start spewing out phrases like “Oh what an ill-omened day, here’s another useless one.” If only he could, he would dash us to the ground. He keeps repeating “She will be in someone else’s family later on,” and looks at us with cold or disdainful eyes.

Before many years have passed, without anyone’s bothering to ask if it’s right or wrong, they take out a pair of snow-white bands and bind them around our feet, tightening them with strips of white cotton; even when we go to bed at night we are not allowed to loosen them the least bit, with the result that the flesh peels away and the bones buckle under. The sole purpose of all this is just to ensure that our relatives, friends, and neighbors will all say, “At the so-and so’s the girls have small feet.” Not only that, when it comes time to pick a son-in-law, they rely on the advice of a couple of shameless matchmakers, caring only that the man’s family have some money or influence; they don’t bother to find out if his family background is murky or good, or what his character is like, or whether he’s bright or stupid—they just go along with the arrangement. When it’s time to get married and move to the new house, they hire the bride a sedan chair all decked out with multicolored embroidery, but sitting shut up inside it one can barely breathe. And once you get there, whatever your husband is like, as long as he’s a family man they will tell you you were blessed in a previous existence and are being rewarded in this one. If he turns out no good, they will tell you it’s “retribution for that earlier existence” or “the aura was all wrong.”<sup>34)</sup>

---

34) *Ibid.*, p. 83.

Ch’iu called on Chinese women to rise up from their passivity and resignation to dependence on men and be “resurrected as complete human beings” through education, independence, self-reliance and commitment to progress, not only for their own sake but also for halting the destruction of China.<sup>35)</sup>

In the same year, this dual interest in women’s liberation and national survival led her to abandon her husband and two young children, scrape together some personal resources and go to Japan for study. Enrolling in the Aoyama Vocational Girls School in Tokyo, she soon became involved in the anti-Ch’ing activities of Sun Yat-sen’s Revolutionary Alliance (*T’ung-meng hui*), and also contributed articles to a progressive journal run by expatriate Chinese students. To make a visible point about her commitment to gender equality she often dressed in male western attire. The 1905 Japanese victory over Russia exhilarated her like many other Asians and she determined to return home to throw herself into anti-Manchu revolutionary activity. In the guise of a school teacher in Shaoshing, Chekiang, from early 1906 on she participated with other radical elements in a plot for an armed uprising against the Ch’ing regime. Exposed and arrested, Ch’iu was beheaded on July 15, 1907. Thus, a promising young female voice was stilled by her reckless idealism’s apyxiation at the hands of a brutally vengeful state.<sup>36)</sup>

---

35) Ebrey, *Chinese Civilization and Society*, p. 344.

36) Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace*, pp. 84-93. Could the adoption, for a time, of male attire by Ichikawa Fusae, a feminist politician of postwar Japan, and by Kim Ok-son, a female lawmaker of South Korea during the Park Chung-Hee regime have been inspired by Ch’iu Chin?

Though none of the critics, visionaries and activists covered above accomplished their immediate goal of transforming China into a strong and modern nation—there was even an element of naivete in their plans—all carved out a permanent place in the history of China’s modernization through the freshness of their ideas, their patriotism, their bold and pioneering activism and their larger-than-life personalities. They helped raise Chinese awareness of the need for fundamental reforms. In manifold ways, other reformists, even revolutionists, built their work on the intellectual foundations laid by them, even when the revolutionists charted a different course and used different methods. The short-lived state-sponsored reforms of 1905-1911, the New Culture Movement of the late 1910s and early 1920s, with its own sharp attacks on debilitating traditions, warlordism, national paralysis, imperialism, and its own multiple agendas of social and political change, all took roots in the fertile soil created by the earlier reformist thought. Indeed, the ripple effects of that era are still being felt today in contemporary China’s unfinished business of social and political democratization.

#### JAPAN: STATISM, DISSENT AND ALTERNATIVE VISIONS

For examining those who shaped Japan’s development during 1895-1905 one must first recognize a fundamental difference in context from both China and Korea. Already by 1895 Japan had accomplished such rapid modernization of its political, social, military, industrial, commer-

cial, financial, transport, communication and education systems that it had become the envy of the rest of Asia and also drew occasional accolades from Westerners. Basil Hall Chamberlain (1850-1935), a long-term writer and teacher in Meiji Japan, captured this transformation with a compelling image. Japan’s swift place of change, he said, “makes a man feel preternaturally old; for here his is in modern times, ... and yet he can himself distinctly remember the Middle Ages ... Thus does it come about that ... we ourselves feel well-nigh four hundred years old.”<sup>37)</sup>

Further, as we have seen, Japan had become a colonial empire at the expense of China. It had also renegotiated its “unequal” treaty with England toward mutual equality and was on its way to regaining its full political and economic sovereignty and “national honor” through similar parleys with other western powers. Japan was determined to speedily get rid of the entire unequal treaty system imposed on it by the West during the years after its forced “opening” in 1854. Through its own 1876 “opening” of Korea through intimidation and through its subsequent aggressive interventions in Korean affairs, it had in fact “moved up,” so to speak, from being a victim of Western highhandedness to its somewhat clumsy practitioner, and was now one of the causes of instability and anxiety in both China and Korea. Japan had not only neutralized China as a

---

37) Quoted in Kenneth B. Pyle, *The Making of Modern Japan*, 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed. (Lexington, MA: D.C. Heath, 1996), pp. viii-ix. For a recent summary of the early to mid-Meiji era reforms see W.G. Beasley, *The Japanese Experience: A Short History of Japan* (Berkeley, CA: The University of California Press, 1999), pp. 21-235.

rival but was now preparing to confront Russia, the other potential adversary in East Asia, in a drive to gain control of Northeast Asia. The events of 1899-1905 only enhanced Japan's power, "glory" and "status" by enabling it to join the hitherto exclusive Western club of imperialism. Its participation with Western powers in military action against the Boxers in 1899-1900, its strategic alliance in 1902 with Britain, its defeat of Russia in the war of 1904-1905, and its imposition of a protectorate over Korea in the midst of it as a step toward the inexorable annexation of the peninsula, all put Japan in a radically distinct category during this period. Naturally, efforts for the further modernization of Japan became connected to different motives, purposes, plans, nuances, actions and consequences than those in China and Korea. Depending on whether one is looking at these efforts from the perspective of the governing elites or of the down-trodden, disenfranchised, neglected and alienated segments of society, one sees both advancement and repression, progress as well as tyranny.

The leading figures in Japanese government during 1895-1905 were Ito Hirobumi (1841-1909), Yamagata Aritomo (1838-1922), Kuroda Kiyotaka (1840-1900), Saigo Tsugumichi (1847-1902), Oyama Iwao (1842-1916), Inoue Kaoru (1835-1915), and Matsukata Masayoshi (1840-1924). Collectively known as the *genro* ("elder statesmen"), this group's two most prominent names were Ito and Yamagata, each an important samurai leader of the Meiji Restoration and subsequent reforms: Ito, from the former Choshu domain, through his skillful play at the game of domestic and international politics, and Yamagata, from the former Satsuma domain,

through his no-nonsense build-up of Japanese armed forces for action abroad and a bureaucratic, police-state style of governance at home. Between them, these two men, despite their occasional feuds, carried out a statist consensus representing all the *genro*, whether they were doing things themselves or were acting through their proteges, Saionji Kimmochi and Katsura Taro. At the top of the Satsuma-Choshu (*Sat-cho*) clique, Ito and Yamagata manipulated, more than others, the levers of state power and used them to lend their own direction to Japan's modernization. In this section, the role of Ito will serve as an illustration of their shared statist vision. Discussion of the alternative visions and actions will follow later.

Ito was the creator of Japan's modern cabinet system in 1885, the supra-cabinet Privy Council in 1888, and the marginally representative bicameral Diet under a semi-modern Prussian-style Constitution in 1889, and he wrapped it all up in the family-state concept of *kokutai*. This concept, using the Shinto language of reverence for the exalted throne, presented the Emperor as a father-figure and repository of national sovereignty who embodied the *kokutai* in his person and sanctified it in his religious-moral capacity as the heir to a lineage deemed "sacred" and "unbroken for ages eternal" and extending all the way back to the mythical "Sun Goddess" (*Amaterasu Omikami*). The initial limit on participation in elections to the Diet's House of Representatives set at less than 1.25% of the population, the restriction of suffrage to men, the creation of a new system of 5-rank nobility, the powerful place given to the aristocratic House of

Peers, the designation of the Emperor as the law-giver and maker of war and peace, the subservient position of the prime minister, the cabinet and the Diet to the Emperor, the blanket limits imposed by the “peace-preservation” laws of the 1880s and 1890s on the newly-awarded liberties such as freedom of speech, press, organization, and movement, and the 1890 Imperial Rescript on Education—all bore the imprint of Ito and the *Sat-cho* oligarchy behind him.<sup>38)</sup> The Rescript reaffirmed the Confucian virtues of filial piety at home and unflinching loyalty and service to the throne “coeval with heaven and earth,” and thus turned the Meiji statism into a warm and fuzzy dispensation.<sup>39)</sup>

During 1895-1905 Ito and his associates did their best, through draconian thought-control laws, to ensure that this emphasis on the ultra-nationalistic primacy of the state would not be questioned with impunity. He also made it clear through his writings and speeches that the people should not harbor the notion that they had “wrested” the new “participatory” constitutional system from the Emperor through an unseemly and “ominous” struggle, in the manner of the British Magna Carta; they should rather remember that they received the new system as a “gift” from a benevolent and “enlightened” Emperor who had bestowed it on them

---

38) For details see Edwin O. Reischauer and Albert M. Craig, *Japan: Tradition and Transformation* (Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1989), pp. 166-178.

39) Ryusaku Tsunoda, Wm. Theodore DeBary and Donald Keene, ed., *Sources of Japanese Tradition*, Vol. 2 (New York and London: Columbia University Press, 1990), pp. 139-140.

out of his own concern for the “welfare and happiness of the nation.”<sup>40)</sup> In 1899, during a speech in Hagi, his hometown, Ito exhorted his audience to assist the government in carrying out “the affairs of the nation” for the “nation’s aims, the nation’s prestige and the nation’s honor.” “The aim of our country has been from the very beginning,” he said, “to attain among the nations of the world the status of a civilized nation and become a member of the comity of European and American nations which occupy the position of civilized nations.” National power and national glory were the paths to such “civilized status.”<sup>41)</sup> All subjects were to act as enablers toward that end by assisting both the military and economic actions taken in its pursuit.

If in quest of this aim, a government-controlled political party and a slight expansion of the electorate became necessary, then Ito was not above accommodating both. In 1900 Ito became instrumental in the creation of the *Seiyukai* (“Friends of Constitutional Government”) and it soon became one of the two major parties, the other successively called *Kaishinto*, *Shimpoto* or *Kenseito* (“The Progressive Party”).<sup>42)</sup> Ito and his associates at the same time slightly expanded the electorate to 2.18% with a view to blunting the rising public criticism of their oligarchic rule. Still, the overall statism of the oligarchs remained unaltered. The expansion of

---

40) *Ibid.*, pp. 163-164.

41) *Ibid.*, p. 172.

42) This party would undergo many realignments and name changes later, eventually ending up with the name *Minseito* (“Popular Rule Party”).



education, with virtually full elementary school enrollment by 1910, was also accomplished with the statist objective of creating literate subjects who could be effectively enlisted in the numerous state-building endeavors, military and civil, public and private. The further growth of industry and commerce under the state's patronage of the *zaibatsu* ("financial cliques") became connected with military conquests and other empire-building actions, and the literate subjects of Japan were constantly harnessed and mobilized in the service of both.

When one shifts one's gaze toward those outside the government, a more complex picture emerges. Hyper-patriotism, jingoism and expansionism were not confined to government leaders. In fact, such sentiments were remarkably common in the populace, both in a generalized way and in the form of organized prowar campaigns.<sup>43)</sup> Yet there were also countervailing currents—a rich mixture of ideas, ranging from temperate patriotism and alternative forms of public service to militant dissent from statism and the active espousal of those whom the state had left behind or simply held in contempt, those who in effect became Japan's human "cannon fodder."

Okuma Shigenobu (1838-1922) stood astride the world of government and opposition in the Meiji Period, although on balance he was more a "mainstream" dissenter than a collaborator of the *Sat-cho* oli-

garchs. His views on the meaning of "progress" were inevitably influenced by this ambiguity. A Hizen samurai who participated in the Meiji Restoration, Okuma thereafter became a quick study in finance and foreign affairs. He served as minister of finance in the early 1870's. Despite this insider status, Okuma never quite fit in with the *Sat-cho* oligarchs, especially because of his pronounced Anglophilia. As early as 1881 he had petitioned the throne for the speedy establishment of a British-type, representative and "responsible" form of government with competing political parties and the principle of majority rule. This "rash" action angered the *Sat-cho* oligarchs enough to force his ouster from the government. After that, for many years Okuma led the Progressive Party that he had helped found. The party catered heavily to urban elements—businessmen, educators and journalists. With Fukuzawa Yukichi (1834-1901), an early advocate of "enlightenment and civilization" whose private academy would later grow into the prestigious Keio University, Okuma established a school that, with much help from the Mitsubishi combine, in his own lifetime blossomed into the highly regarded Waseda University. While he served as foreign minister twice during the late 1880s and the late 1890s and was even prime minister for a paltry four months during 1898, from 1895 until 1915 it's best to see him as a "mainstream" opponent of the government (Not until 1915 would Okuma be chosen as prime minister for a truly substantive tenure).

Through this "outsider" status Okuma strengthened two ideas in the Japanese quest of modernity. One was that private higher educa-

---

43) On this theme see Donald Keene's articles on war and Japanese intellectuals in his book *Landscapes and Portraits* (Tokyo, Japan: Kodansha International, 1971); and Ienaga Saburo, *The Pacific War* (New York: Pantheon Books, 1976).

tion was as important as state-funded and state-controlled education. For cultivating independence, individuality, truthful investigations and an open-minded pursuit of knowledge, private education was even more crucial. In addition, he argued that a nation consisted of both state and society, and the state could not always be counted upon to represent the true intentions and interests of the society. Waseda, to Okuma, would be one of the instrumentalities for producing graduates who would serve the nation in the non-state sectors of society. They would be model citizens of Japan but would also have a world-affairs awareness. Secondly, through his continued engagement with the task of expanding and refining the main opposition party, Okuma worked hard to challenge the *Sat-cho* group's monopoly of power and helped lead Japan's nascent constitutional order toward what in essence became a two-party system (with marginal groups operating on the periphery). Okuma's methods in this role remained eminently gradualist and reformist, and he also remained wedded to the notion of serving the "dignity of the Imperial Household."<sup>44)</sup>

In his goals, thus, Okuma was not radically different from the *Sat-cho* group but simply wanted to inject elements of pluralism and accountability into a system that bordered on a "control-freak" form of patriotism and conformity. Okuma otherwise never deviated from the pursuit of

---

44) Tsunoda, DeBary and Keene, *Sources of Japanese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 172-176, 183-187.

national power and territorial expansion. There is no evidence that he questioned the Sino-Japanese War, the colonization of Taiwan, the Russo-Japanese War, the Japanese protectorate over Korea, the acquisition of "rights" in Manchuria, and the annexation of Korea. Okuma's idea of progress included no concept of justice toward non-Japanese and no pacifism. In keeping with this mind-set it was Okuma who, as prime minister in 1915, imposed the infamous 21 Demands on China. If accepted in their entirety they would have reduced China to a colony of Japan with only a fig leaf as a cover (It is a paradox of history that the "militarist" Yamagata actually opposed these demands).<sup>45)</sup> Despite his progressive ideas about educated citizenship and expanded political participation, Okuma thus remained defined by the statist ethos of his time.

It fell to elements unconnected to mainstream institutions and processes of politics to articulate visions of modernity that addressed the needs and aspirations of those who were being manipulated as helpless cogs in the iniquitous Meiji juggernaut of "advancement." In what follows I shall present glimpses of the challenge to Meiji statism mounted by Christian humanism, socialism, and feminism in behalf of democratic inclusiveness.

Movements for inclusiveness were not without precedents. The People's Rights Movement (*jiyu minken undo*) of the late 1870s and early 1880s, inspired by Rousseau, Locke, Bentham, Mill, and the U.S.

---

45) *Ibid.*, pp. 209-210.

Declaration of Independence had been a lively campaign through both the press and organized political agitation. Prominent intellectuals and activists, including some female figures, had lent their weight to the movement. Fukuzawa Yukichi, Itagaki Taisuke, Nakae Chomin, Ueki Emori, Fukuda Hideko and many others were involved in raising consciousness about people's rights (*minken*) as opposed to state's rights (*kokken*).<sup>46)</sup> Yet, by mid-1890s their voices had either been silenced by apostasy and conversion to statism or stilled through old age, death or draconian laws against freedom of expression and political activity. Nevertheless, the continuing growth of higher education, journalism and foreign travel produced a brand new crop of analysts and activists who looked at the increasing injustices of a repressive state and a "dual economy" with profound concern, even outrage. Large segments of both rural and urban Japan seemed hopelessly trapped in abysmal poverty while the *zaibatsu* and their statist patrons flourished amid war and imperialism.<sup>47)</sup> The new voices of protest and reform picked up the thread that the People's Rights Movement had spun and endeavored to weave a fresh fabric of modernity, with democracy, egalitarianism, pacifism and ethical behavior as its central pattern.

Uchimura Kanzo (1861-1930), a Christian convert of samurai background who had been educated as an agriculturist at Amherst, became

---

46) See the works of Pittau and Sievers cited above.

47) On this subject see Mikiso Hane, *Peasants, Rebels and Outcasts: The Underside of Modern Japan* (New York: Pantheon, 1982).

well-known for his championship of an individualistic, "no-church" faith in Christ, modernization and pacifism. Using journalism as a vehicle for his ideas, Uchimura relentlessly reiterated his calls for Japan's Christianization. In a 1903 essay, he lambasted the shallow modernity of Meiji Japan, arguing that Japan had borrowed only the outer trappings of Western civilization without understanding its Christian fundamentals. Unless the Christian faith became the faith of Japan, neither its people as individuals nor it as a nation would ever be able to equal the strength and virtues of the West. It was no so much the Greco-Roman heritage of the West as the ideas of men like Milton, Cromwell, Washington and Lincoln that created the western concept of "freedom," and it had its roots in the power of their faith in Christ. Individual rights in the West grew because they were paralleled by an abiding sense of responsibility embedded in a "spiritual relationship to God and Nature." Western philosophy and science, with their love of knowledge and their restless search for "truth" in depth were not adversaries but products of this spiritual connection. Japan, by contrast, had achieved only a superficial degree of progress, marked by a total lack of freshness in discourse and scientific creativity. Uchimura also attributed the "depravity and corruption in Japanese politics and education," characterized by a lavish use of "money, wine [and] women," to the absence of God in society. Neither true knowledge nor a truly representative government could ever emerge from a Godless, Christ-less culture. Japan's salvation clearly lay in adopting "the very essence of Western civilization, which is Christianity," insisted

Uchimura.<sup>48)</sup>

No one before had given this kind of shrill and categorical clarion call for the total conversion of Japan to Christianity in the interest of “true” progress. In an era when “emperorumism” was being intensively propagated by the state as the core of Japan’s political and cultural identity, Uchimura’s bugle was an audacious defiance of, if not a reckless affront to, the guardians of kokutai, though he, too, marshalled the prevailing patriotic sentiments in his own way. In his 1895 autobiography Uchimura asserted that he loved “Two J’s” equally: Jesus and Japan. He left instructions to have the following epitaph inscribed on his tomb:

I for Japan;  
Japan for the world;  
The world for Christ;  
and all for God.<sup>49)</sup>

Uchimura’s exuberant nationalism helped in mitigating the threat of his Christian individualism to the oligarchs’ statism. This cushion was not, however, available to the radical socialist and feminist voices of the era, for they were more frontally opposed to Meiji policies. In spite of the state’s mobilization of many thought-control laws, variants of socialist ideology had crept into the consciousness of many educated Japanese. A year before

---

48) David John Lu, ed., *Japan: A Documentary History*, vol.2, (Armonk, NY: M.E. Sharpe, 1997), pp. 360-365.

49) Tsunoda, DeBary and Keene, *Sources of Japanese Tradition*, Vol. 2, pp. 347-350.

his assassination in 1909, Ito had publicly expressed his apprehension about the “threatening advance of socialistic ideas” during the previous years.<sup>50)</sup> Radical versions of socialism brooked no patriotism and were concentrating their energies on arousing the weak, exploited and voiceless segments of society against those identifiable institutions, structures and policies that caused economic inequity, social oppression, political repression, and imperialist wars. In 1901, for example, noted socialists Abe Iso (185-1949), Katayama Sen (1859-1933), and Kotoku Shusui (1871-1911) joined other activists to form the Social Democratic Party in Tokyo. Though Abe’s Christian humanism was an ingredient of his personal inspiration, the party’s platform was unmistakably socialist in its thrust. The platform called economic equality a precondition of political equality, and vowed to work for the abolition of wealth disparities. It pointed to the corrupt collusion among landlords, capitalists, aristocrats and the established political parties in the Diet as being responsible for the disenfranchisement of the propertyless rural and urban workers, “the majority of the nation.”

The party called for full public ownership of land, capital, industry, all means of transportation, electricity, gas operations and insurance, and for an equitable distribution of wealth. It demanded limits on rents, prohibition of child labor and of the “immoral,” health-impairing work and night shifts for women workers. It planned to campaign for an eight-hour workday with Sundays off, labor’s right to unionize, the abrogation of all

---

50) *Ibid.*, p. 167.

repressive laws, the abolition of the House of Peers, full adult suffrage, direct and secret elections for all offices, elimination of the death penalty, state-supported education for all, extension of compulsory education to the eighth grade, complete disarmament in the interest of peace among nations, and a whole lot more. Recognizing that all these goals were not easily achievable, the party was willing to settle for more realistic targets as a start. Calling itself a party of “democracy and socialism,” it declared the provision of sufficient food, clothing, housing, and “sympathetic cure in sickness and old age” as its immediate objective, and pledged to work for it through peaceful means.

Mobilizing the Peace Preservation Law of 1900, the government banned the Social Democratic Party immediately after its emergence, forcing its leaders to voice their views as individuals, though in that capacity too they did so in defiance of the state.<sup>51)</sup> In 1908, Kotoku Shusui wrote a scathing newspaper article denouncing taxation for war goals, saying that “for the sake of war” had become a powerful narcotic in the hands of government to dull the rational judgment of all parties in the Diet. International wars, he argued, benefited only “a small number of [ambitious] people” but they “disturb peace, prevent progress, and create a host of miseries for the common people.” He wondered about the wisdom of having a “state, a government or taxes,” and called for efforts to change the “government of politicians, war profiteers, soldiers and their families” into a “government

---

51) Lu, *Japan: A Documentary History*, Vol. 2, pp. 365-371.

of the people,” and “for peace.” Only socialism, Kotoku concluded, would bring about such a political system. Then there would be genuine happiness in society, as illustrated by an ancient Chinese poem:

I dig a well to drink its water,  
I cultivate a field to produce food.  
At sunrise I go to the field,  
At sunset I return to my shelter  
The power of the Emperor  
Reacheth me not.<sup>52)</sup>

Frustrated by the state’s police power in their attempts to cultivate popular support through peaceful means, after the Russo-Japanese War some socialists, including Kotoku, turned toward clandestine anarchism. In 1911, along with eleven others—a roster that included Japan’s first female anarchist, Kanno Sugako—Kotoku was executed for his alleged complicity in a plot to assassinate the Meiji Emperor. Thus, Christianity and socialism both failed to weaken, let alone dislodge, Japanese statism from its secure perch. The punitive power and propaganda machinery of the state rendered even the most fearless brand of anti-government radicalism puny in effect. Yet, as in China, the stones that these men threw into the pond of Japanese society and politics created ever-widening ripples in national consciousness during later decades. While Christianity

---

52) *Ibid.*, pp. 371-373.

never took hold in Japan except as an extremely marginal religion, many of the Social Democratic Party's ideas found fulfillment after World War II under the U.S. Occupation. Paradoxically, the Americans would use the machinery of state to dismantle the structures of statism and to lay the groundwork for a democratic, egalitarian and peace-oriented Japan.<sup>53)</sup>

Toward this evolution early Japanese feminism made its own notable contributions. Of all the feminist voices of the late 19<sup>th</sup>-and early 20<sup>th</sup>-century Japan none was more eloquent, more soul-stirring and more charged with potency than that of Yosano Akiko (1878-1942). Before examining role in defining Meiji Japan's modernity one needs to understand the specific constraints and circumstances of women's lives. They stemmed from traditional Confucian notions regarding proper female behavior, the Meiji era's "work opportunities" for women, and the 1898 Civil Code's provisions governing marriage, divorce, inheritance, and the like.

The statist philosophy of Meiji oligarchs defined women's proper roles in two ways. Harnessing the traditional "Three Obediences" of women-in childhood to father, in marriage to husband, and in old age to son

the oligarchs formulated a dual policy: Married women were to serve the state from within the confines of the family by being "good wives and wise mothers" (*ryosai kenbo*), thus providing domestic support to men's public roles. Teenage girls and unmarried women of workable age were to take up

---

53) For a summary of the U.S. Occupation's reforms see Reischauer and Craig, *Japan: Tradition and Transformation*, pp. 277-287.

either physical work in mines and factories, especially textile plants, or menial work in hospitals and government and business offices. Education for most women was designed to cultivate the pliant personality necessary for subservience to male superiors in all settings and for giving women the basic skills for efficient household management and productive performance in the workplace. Any form of political participation for women was out of the question, and the Meiji Civil Code gave state sanction to women's status as "minors under law." The Code gave few rights to, and put many constraints on, women. For example, Meiji women could be subject to both civil and criminal penalties if convicted of adultery, but a woman could not get a divorce from an adulterous husband. A wife's contracts, to be valid, were required to be approved by the husband. A wife could inherit her husband's property only if there were no lineal heirs. A daughter's inheritance of family property likewise followed that of male heirs, and a widow needed her in-laws' permission to remarry. The groom's family also had the right not to register a marriage until a year later so that they might test the bride's subservience to the in-laws and also be sure of her ability to bear on heir.<sup>54)</sup>

Young women were employed in such massive numbers in light industries, notably textile mills, that by 1890 they constituted 60% to 90% of

---

54) See Sharon H. Nolte and Sally Ann Hastings, "The Meiji State's Policy Toward Women, 1890-1910," in Gail Lee Bernstein, ed., *Recreating Japanese Women* (Berkeley, CA: University of California Press, 1991). See also Joy Paulson, "Evolution of the Feminine Ideal," in Joyce Lebra, Joy Paulson, and Elizabeth Powers, ed., *Women in Changing Japan* (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1976) pp. 14-15.

their workforce, and are estimated to have contributed 40% of the GNP and 60% of the foreign-exchange earnings of Japan during the late 19<sup>th</sup>-century.<sup>55)</sup> Yet the treatment of such inestimable employees was typical of the “sweat-shop” management practices of the era. Often sold into bonded servitude by their poor parents, these girls and women frequently worked 12-hour shifts in unhealthy physical conditions, lived packed like sardines in company dormitories under male supervisors, were ill-paid and ill-nourished, were often subjected to verbal and physical abuse by their male bosses, and not infrequently succumbed to the dread disease of tuberculosis or ended up as suicides. In addition, hard pressed rural parents sometimes sold their young daughters to brothels to alleviate their penury, causing yet another experience of exploitation and degradation.<sup>56)</sup> This dark “under-side” of Meiji Japan scarcely drew the care of the state. The problems of women in fact could be seen as a direct by-product of the state’s mad dash toward modern industrialism and national power and “glory,” with the mantra of “self-sacrifice” incessantly shoved into the people’s ears.

Yosano Akiko joined her formidable talents and energy to those of other men and women of conscience who were outraged at these injustices. This essentially self-taught woman was nothing if not a multifaceted genius. Born into a merchant family of Sakai (Osaka Prefecture), Akiko married the eminent poet Yosano Tekkan. A gifted poet, essayist,

---

55) *Ibid.*, p. 153.

56) See Hane, *Peasants, Rebels and Outcasts*, cited in f.n. 47 above.

educator, critic, translator of classical Japanese literature, and public speaker, Akiko developed into a tireless campaigner for the improvement of women’s social, political, legal and economic uplift and empowerment. She was also an unabashed advocate of women’s right to express their sexuality and be independent, self-reliant individuals. Above all, she became known early in her life for her anti-war feelings. A mother of ten well-raised children, “super mom” Akiko could not but evoke feelings of awe and personal inadequacy in ordinary mortals. It was especially through her beautiful and poignant poetry that Akiko created the biggest commotion in society. As early as 1901 she published a volume of verses titled *Midaregami* (“Tangled Hair”) whose suggestive sensuality, beckoned the readers to venture into the intimate world of Akiko’s fervent celebration of female sexuality.<sup>57)</sup> Her poetic creativity in fact went beyond that. In the words of two of her translators:

Hers was a poetry of protest, of love, of emancipation for women, of the glorification of ... flesh. She sympathized with the down-trodden the lonely prostitute, the woman kept waiting, the isolated traveler ... She was the first to glorify the female body.<sup>58)</sup>

*Midaregami* was the harbinger of Akiko’s later militancy on

---

57) See Laurel Resplica Rodd, “Yosano Akiko and the Taisho Debate Over the ‘New Woman,’” in Bernstein, ed., *Recreating Japanese Women*.

58) Quoted in Patricia Morley, *The Mountain is Moving: Japanese Women’s Lives* (New York: New York University Press, 1999), p. 147.

women's suffrage and social and economic rights. The poem that she contributed to the inaugural issue of *Seito* ("Blue-Stockings), a late Meiji-early Taisho feminist journal, became the inspirational hymn for generations of female activists not only in Japan but also all over the world:

The day the mountains move has come.  
I speak, but no one believes me.  
For a time the mountains have been asleep,  
But long ago they all danced with fire.  
It doesn't matter if you believe this,  
My friends, as long as you believe:  
All the sleeping women  
Are now awake and moving.<sup>59)</sup>

Nothing from Akiko's active pen, however, drew as much attention and ire from the "patriots" of Japan as her eloquent and moving poem of attack on the Russo-Japanese War. In Jay Rubin's elegant translation, she calls upon her younger brother not to enlist for war:

O my little brother  
I beg you: do not die in battle.  
To add to mother's grief  
When she lost father this autumn past,  
They took her son

---

59) Rodd, "Yosano Akiko and the Taisho Debate," in Bernstein, ed., *Recreating Japanese Women*, p. 180.

And left her to protect the house.  
I hear of "peace" in this great Emperor's reign,  
And yet our mother's hair grows ever  
whiter.

Your pliant, young bride crouches  
weeping  
In the shadows of the shop curtains.  
Do you think of her, or have you  
forgotten?  
Imagine the heart of this sweet girl—  
Not ten months were you together!  
Who else has she in all the world  
To care for her but you?  
I beg you, brother: do not die.  
Oh my little brother, I weep for you  
And beg you: do not die—  
You, last-born and most beloved.  
Did our parents  
Put a blade into your hand  
And teach you to kill men?  
"Kill men and die in battle," did they say  
And raise you so 'til twenty-four?

It is you who are to carry on the name  
You who are to be master of  
This proud, old merchant house.  
I beg you: do not die.



What concern is it of yours  
If the Russian fortress falls or stands?  
Of this, the merchant household code  
Says nothing.

I beg you: do not die.  
His Imperial Majesty—he himself—  
Enters not the field of battle.  
So vast and deep his sacred heart.  
He cannot wish for you to spill  
Your own blood and another's  
To die the death of beasts,  
To think such death is glory!<sup>60)</sup>

In this touching expression of an affectionate sister's anguish at her younger brother's conscription into the war, Akiko focused the readers' attention on the primacy of marriage and family, the pursuit of normal economic life undisturbed by war-mongers, and the hypocritical personal abstinence from the battlefield by a "sacred" emperor who, behind the pompous drivel of his apologists on the "samurai-like" "benevolence" of the throne, was disengaged from the loss of precious young lives. In addition, by bluntly, though exquisitely, affirming peace and life against war

---

60) Jay Rubin, *Injurious to Public Morals: Writers in the Meiji State* (Seattle and London: University of Washington Press, 1984), pp. 56-57. It should be noted here that the same Akiko later supported Japan's role in the Pacific War; she too eventually underwent a "change of heart."

and death when most subjects were numbed and cowed by statist propaganda, Akiko seemed to have shown the hypernationalists as both mindless and craven in their incapacity to confront the injustice and horror of imperialist expansionism. Is it any wonder that this "traitor," as many "patriots" called her, had to endure threats to her life and the pelting of her dwelling with stones from irate passersby?

By pointing to the warped character of Meiji Japan's modernity as a result of imperialism and war, and to the arrested development of women and other abused or silenced groups, Akiko added her weight to the legacy of her politically aware older sisters from the People's Rights Movement, shared that legacy with her peers, and passed it on to her successors. To be sure, their cherished hopes remained unfulfilled despite some progress during the relatively liberal period of "Taisho Democracy (1912-1926) due to the overwhelming forces of militarism that rose to run Japan after 1933. Women, like other repressed groups, were able to breathe the fresh air of freedom, equality and dignity only as a result of the postwar reforms enacted by the U.S. Occupation. Akiko's message remained alive through most of the turbulent decades before those reforms, and is still heard today in Japan's on-going efforts toward social and political modernization.

## SO CHAE-PIL IN EAST ASIAN COMPARATIVE PERSPECTIVE

When examining So Chae-p'il's contributions to Korea's modern

transformation during the late 1890s, what is first noteworthy is that of all the figures discussed in this essay he was the only one who legally was a U.S. citizen, he was the only one with an American medical degree, and he was the only one with a sustained, ten-year long series of direct experiences with Western civilization through both higher education and a professional medical career. He was steeped both in the rigorous principles of medicine and in the general scientific culture of looking at things with clinical detachment, combined with optimism in the curative and progress-oriented efficacy of truth, knowledge and enterprise. So had not only read works of Western philosophy, history and politics, he had personally witnessed and savored Western prosperity, political behavior, ways of thinking and expression, organization and human relationships in a way that can only be called deep cultural immersion. He had Americanized his name to Philip Jaisohn, converted to Christianity, married a woman from a “respectable” American family, and practiced medicine at a premier U.S. government hospital before heading back to Korea at the end of 1895. None of the other figures who form the focus of this article had anything close to this *combination* of features to set them apart from their compatriots.<sup>61)</sup>

All this indubitably played a role in shaping So’s intellectual and

---

61) In this section, I have relied heavily upon my own previous work and on the writings of Young Ick Lew, Shin Yong-Ha, Chong-Sik Lee, Yu Yong-yol, Kenneth Wells, and many others. I am keeping citations minimal here as they have all been extensively given in my monograph, *Imperialism, Resistance and Reform in Late 19th-Century Korea: Enlightenment and the Independence Club, 1896-1898* (Berkeley, CA: Institute of East Asian Studies, 1988).

moral visions and his work in Korea. In many ways, he was no longer a man of Korean “soil” but was in the distinctive position of someone “looking in” from the outside, with eyes that could combine affection and devotion to his former homeland with a stern, even reproachful critique of Korea when the circumstances called for it. In what follows I will show how So’s nationalism and reformism mirrored as well as differed from those of his Chinese and Japanese counterparts. It is, of course, well-known that So’s ideas found their context in Korea’s international and domestic situation, which in some respects was similar to China’s but had far less in common with that of Japan.

To those contemplating its future in 1895, Korea presented a picture of both hope and apprehension. The hope stemmed from the reforms in the political, legal, social, economic, educational and military systems that had taken place since the “opening” of the country in 1876. Despite the violent upheavals that occurred during that period—the 1882 mutiny, the short-lived 1884 coup, the Tonghak Uprising of 1893-1894, the Sino-Japanese War of 1894-1895 (fought heavily on Korean soil), and the temporary yet iron-fisted control of the peninsula by Tokyo during the war—Korea now had bilateral relations with many nations, including Western ones. There was now legitimate interaction between Koreans and foreigners, including Christian missionaries. Increasing numbers of Koreans, if still modest as a group, were beginning to require both direct and indirect knowledge of the wider world through education and travel. Important reforms had been promulgated both under the Min hegemony and under

the pro-Japanese Korean groups. Though imposed under Japanese aegis, the *Kabo-Ulmi* (1894-95) reforms had introduced a Meiji-type rationality into government organization, outlawed the class system, the old, anachronistic bureaucratic examinations and the remnants of private slavery, banned discrimination against widows and “illegitimate” children (*soja*), instituted the western calendar, and inaugurated modern judicial, police and educational institutions. These and other innovations, though implemented fitfully because of the government’s perpetual in-fighting and reshuffles, were all part of a new social and political vocabulary and discourse. Inspired by both Western and Japanese examples, Korean reformists, notably Kim Ok-kyun, Pak Yong-hyo, and Yu Kil-chun had popularized such Meiji-type slogans as “Civilization and Enlightenment” (*munmyong kaehwa*) and “A Strong and Prosperous State Under Civilized and Enlightened Conditions” (*munmyong kaehwa ui puguk kangbyong*) through their writings and memorials and through such short-lived but pioneering journalistic forums as *Hansong sunbo* and *Hansong chubo*. A small but growing group of educated Koreans, some products of the new Christian schools, were becoming aware of and interested in such notions as popular sovereignty, rule of law, political parties, representative assemblies, modern medicine, science and technology, and economic and military modernization, Western religious beliefs, and Western social practices. Korea’s legal independence from China had been reaffirmed through the Shimonoseki Treaty and the sentiment of national independence had also been ardently reiterated in the writings of Korean reformists mentioned above. Only die-

hard Confucianists continued to insist on the sacrosanctity of the old Sino-Korean tributary relationship.<sup>62)</sup>

Yet Korea was also now more vulnerable due to its geo-political and military weaknesses, unending bureaucratic factionalism and the disarray at the top epitomized by the irresolute personality and policies of King Kojong. He could make and abrogate policies, laws and appointments with bewildering rapidity as he responded to the conflicting and often self-serving counsel of whoever had his ear at any given time. Covetous foreign powers were eager to exploit such weaknesses in their hunt for “concessions” designed to develop and exploit Korea’s natural resources and potential market for their products and services. While the pro-China party of Korea was now in eclipse and the pro-Japan group was temporarily out of favor due to Tokyo’s high-handed actions during 1894-1895, other factions emerged, this time with Russian or Anglo-American leanings. None of this augured well for Korea’s fledgling and fragile independence and future development. This situation was broadly akin to China’s when the K’ang group swung into action to cope with it. Likewise, So’s self-chosen challenge was to preserve Korean independence by reinforcing its defenses against the gathering dangers, and to transform the country into a modern nation-state. That was what shaped his new career in Korea.

In light of the foregoing it is easy to see why the word “independence” became the flying standard of So’s vision for Korea. *The Independent*

---

62) *Ibid.*, Chapters 2-4.

(*Tongnip sinmun*) *The Independence Club* (*Tongnip hyophoe*), *The Independence Gate*, *The Independence Hall* (*Tongnip hoegwan*), and the unfinished *Independence Park* (*Tongnip kongwon*) every project that So started or inspired made it loud and clear to Koreans and foreigners alike that Korea should be a land only for Koreans standing proudly as free citizens of a free state. The Independence Gate and its twin, the Independence Hall, were deliberately constructed at the site of the old *Yongun-mun* (“Gate of Welcome and Blessing”) and *Mohwa-gwan* (“Hall of Cherishing China”), both symbols of Korea’s age-old subservience to China, but as the *Independent* said in its inaugural issue, the new symbols were to stand not just for “independence from China alone but from Japan, from Russia and all European powers...” The same emphasis was reflected in the ceremonies sponsored by the Independence Club to commemorate the royal birthdays and the founding of the Choson Dynasty. The Club-inspired change in the name of the country from *Choson wangguk* (“The Kingdom of Korea”) to *Taehan cheguk* (“The Empire of Taehan”) and in the title of the ruler from king to emperor (*hwangje*) rounded out this series of independence and dignity-oriented symbols.

These actions were accompanied by moves to wean Koreans away from *Hanmun* (the Chinese script) and to lead them toward Korea’s own script, then called *Onmun* (“vulgar writing”) but much later given the more respectable name *Han’gul* (“Korean Writing”). So’s disciple Chu Si-gyong called language “the essence of independence” (*tongnip chi song*) and was later to dedicate his life to establishing Han’gul as the centerpiece of

Korean national identity. *Onmun* of course had the additional virtue of being a far simpler medium compared to *Hanmun*; it could thus serve as a matchless tool for So’s public enlightenment campaign.<sup>63</sup> In this endeavor So and his followers were far ahead of K’ang, T’an, Liang, Yen and other contemporary Chinese patriots. It was only in the late 1910s and early 1920s that Chinese reformists like Lu Hsun, Ch’en Tu-hsiu and Hu Shih began to propagate the use of the vernacular (*paihua*) for literature, journalism and higher education (Until then, the elitist classical Chinese remained the dominant means of intellectual discourse. This factor accounted in part for the slow progress of China’s national integration during the early 20<sup>th</sup>-century).

In focusing the people’s loyalty to the throne as the symbol of a modern national identity, So and his associates were being both safe and clever, despite the private frustration that they sometimes expressed with Kojong’s unsteady personality. The ruler was, after all, the visible head of the nation, and, under the right circumstances, could conceivably be used, like China’s Emperor Kuang-hsu and Japan’s Emperor Meiji, to goad his subjects toward new goals. Yet there were also differences among them. K’ang and Liang had to contend with the anti-Ch’ing (anti Manchu), anti-monarchist and pro-Republican elements gathering momentum, and T’an had to subdue his own anti-Manchu animus to work with the throne for reform. So and the Independence Club were much better positioned in

---

63) *Ibid.*, Chapter 5.

this respect, for there was no “alien” monarchy in Korea, and the mild-mannered Kojong was held in much popular affection. So and his associates were, in actuality, more like mainstream Meiji reformists in this regard. Yet, this analogy with Japan cannot be carried too far. The So group was completely non-aggressive and non-expansionist in its espousal of nationalism. Despite the fact that any expression of nationalism carries a statist dimension and despite So’s hope that the “power and glory” of the Korean throne would someday be “equal to Queen Victoria, the Russian Czar, and the American President,”<sup>64)</sup> the So group harbored no empire-building dreams in its schemes, and there was no Meiji-style jingoism in its idiom. Its sole objective was to defend Korean territory and honor and to develop Korea as an independent, modern, strong and prosperous nation with friendly and equitable relations between itself and other nations. The patriotic songs that the *Independent* sometimes published from its readers along with its own editorials vividly convey the amity-oriented thrust of its nationalism. This mildness of tone was also struck by the *Independent*’s frequent calls to celebrate Korea’s own historical “heroes” such as Yi Sun-sin, Cho Chung-bong, and Im Kyong-op, but combine such celebrations with learning freely and openly from the developed world’s inspiring figures regardless of their nationality. This, to the paper, meant categorically rejecting the “unprogressive” Confucian heritage of both China and Korea, and casting an admiring gaze toward

---

64) *Ibid.*, p. 108.

the Christian West. In this regard So and his chief disciple Yun Ch’i-ho were one part Fukuzawa Yukichi and one part Uchimara Kanzo.<sup>65)</sup>

This harsh attitude toward the Confucian heritage of Korea, combined with a fawning cordiality toward the West, was nevertheless paralleled by a vehement denunciation of, and fierce resistance to, any outside attempts to undermine Korea’s sovereignty and territorial integrity. Both the *Independent* and the Independence Club sharply rebuked foreigners and their corrupt Korean collaborators who were engaged in self-serving “concession hunting,” though they did not question honest, prudent and mutually beneficial dealings between Koreans and foreigners. Through both word and deed the paper and the Club led a successful popular campaign to foil the egregious Russian attempts, aided by unscrupulous Koreans, to establish bases on Korean soil and control the country’s finances, communications and military instruction and training. If allowed to succeed, the Russian moves would have reduced Korea to a semi-appendage of its northern neighbor. Similarly, the paper and the Club thwarted the ill-conceived attempt by the Korean court to hire a multi-national guard to protect the throne; they called this plan an affront to national dignity.<sup>66)</sup> In these efforts, So and his associates showed an identity of aims with the K’ang group of China but with greater short-term success than what was achieved by the latter. The strength of the Club led-

---

65) *Ibid.*, pp. 136-140.

66) *Ibid.*, Chapter 7.

mass agitation of 1897-1898 was the principal factor accounting for this difference.

The blind spots in this nationalism sprang from the Christian connection of So and his chief ally, Yun Ch'i-ho, who, despite his later ill-repute as a "collaborator" of Japan, was a fervent patriot during the Club's existence. So and Yun both were unapologetic champions of the need to Westernize and Christianize Korea. Like Yen Fu and Uchimura Kanzo they saw an integral connection between Western culture and Western energy, progress and creativity; at the same time like Uchimura but unlike Yen, they saw Eastern civilization very simply as Christian civilization. The energy, power, wealth and the progressive spirit of the West were all rooted in Christianity. While the evil that Christian governments and groups had done to other societies was recognized, it was attributed not to their faith but to the distorted or false perceptions that they brought to bear upon it. The best of that faith, to So and Yun, was to be found in its moral teachings and in the secular assets of the West—its emphasis on human dignity, its egalitarianism, its democratic ethos, its education, its sciences, its technology, its enterprising spirit, and the like. So expressed his admiration for the Christian West succinctly:

When [the] young generation absorbs the new ideas and trains itself in Christian civilization, nobody knows what blessings are in store for Korea and what blossoms may bloom in the national life of this

---

67) *Ibid.*, p. 105, p. 140.

cheerless country.<sup>67)</sup>

Yun's praise for Western Christianity, due no doubt to his theological training in America, was even more exuberant, bordering on fulsome in the manner of a zealot. References to God and Christ suffused his writings during the period.<sup>68)</sup> The Club also made certain to associate eminent American missionaries such as Henry Appenzeller and Horace Underwood with the patriotic celebrations mentioned earlier. *The Independent* was published by the Trilingual Press, a missionary enterprise, and the *Korean Repository*, a missionary magazine, and Paejae, the Christian school for boys in Seoul, provided forums to both So and Yun to spread both the secular and religious message of Western civilization. This nexus between the So-Yun team and the Christian missionaries was qualitatively different from the earlier, superficial admiration for the Christian faith that Kim Ok-Kyun and Pak Yong-hyo had once expressed; neither of them personally converted to Christianity. It was also radically different from the K'ang group's approach in China. That group, while learning from missionaries and extending state protection for their activities, not only refrained from personal conversion, as we have seen, but also sought to accommodate progress within a reinterpreted Confucianism; it did not seek to overthrow Confucianism but elevate it to a modern force through reinterpretation.

The difference of So and Yun from the K'ang group could not be

---

68) *Ibid.*, pp. 90-93.

clearer on this point. So poured scorn on the “boasted classics that have plunged [Korea] deeper and deeper into the mire.”<sup>69)</sup> Yun, in a more strident vein, asked the rhetorical question, “What has Confucianism done for Korea?” and offered this answer:

With diffidence yet conviction I dare say that it has done very little, if anything, for Korea...

Behold Korea, with her oppressed masses, her general poverty, [her] treacherous and cruel officers, her dirt and filth, her degraded women, her blighted families—behold all this and judge for yourselves what Confucianism has done for Korea.<sup>70)</sup>

This kind of unforgiving assault on Confucianism and extremist advocacy of “Christian civilization” was fraught with much potential tension. If carried to its logical conclusion, would this transformation not reduce Korea to a mere copy of the West, bereft of its own national moorings? At the end of the process, would Westernization via Christianization still leave some deeper Korean cultural identity, not merely something consisting of land, “race,” language, music, and food? Would the pre-Christian “memory” of Korea not run the risk of being seen merely as “good riddance” even though it might be delivered through landscape painting, poetry, porcelain, *p’ansori* and *samulnori*? So and Yun never appeared to have let such

---

69) *Ibid.*, p. 138.

70) *Ibid.*, pp. 94-95.

questions cross their minds. Yet even in Japan, where modernity was proceeding within the prophylactic armor of state Shinto showing scarcely a dent from Christianity, there was profound concern about the possible loss of national identity amid the feverish rush toward Westernization.<sup>71)</sup>

Looking at the specifics of the reform agenda espoused by So and his associates, it should be noted first that there was hardly an aspect of national life that did not get scrutinized by their inquisitive and analytical pens. Through the *Independent*, through the Club’s short-lived but lively monthly report (*Tongnip hyophoe hoebo*), through the Club-sponsored Debating Society (*T’oron-hoe*), and through his lecture program at the Paejae School, So and his associates launched a lively campaign for consciousness-raising on the need for introducing a modern political and legal system, for modernizing agriculture, sericulture, horticulture, and fisheries, for the expansion of modern industrial, banking, transportation, communication, commercial, mining and shipping enterprises, for the training of a modern army and modern navy, and for the teaching of modern hygiene and sanitation practices.<sup>72)</sup> In this multi-dimensional endeavor So and his group were at one with the K’ang team in the conceptualization of national reform as a systemic undertaking, under which

---

71) On this topic see Kenneth B. Pyle, *The New Generation of Meiji Japan: Problems of Cultural Identity* (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1969).

72) A much fuller range of topics was examined in the Club’s Monthly Report than in the *Independent*. For a summary see Han Hung-su, “Tongnip hyophoe hoebo ui naeyong punsok, in *Sahoe kwahagwon nonch’ong* [Occasional Papers on Social Sciences], no. 6 (Seoul, Korea: Yonsei University Press, 1973).

various facets of the body-politic and individual conduct were organically linked. Here we shall simply look at So's contribution to the political aspects of this package, for he appears to have assumed that a modern, responsible and responsive political system was critical to the success of all other efforts for reform. Apart from the cultivation of nationalism this was the single most important issue to engage the attention of So and his supporters.

If "enlightenment" celebrates egalitarianism, human dignity, individual freedoms, popular sovereignty and popular political participation, then Yi Kwang-nin's designation of So as the Voltaire of the Choson Dynasty<sup>73)</sup> is quite apt. No one in late 19<sup>th</sup>-century Korea did more to popularize such concepts than So, even though Yu Kil-chun and Pak Yong-hyo had previously written about them. Mainly through the editorials of the *Independent* but also using other forums So, joined by Yun, explained the Western theory of social contract and limited government, popular sovereignty, electoral politics, the functions and responsibilities of political parties, elected officials and representative assemblies, the rule of law, democratic procedures for conducting public bodies and public meetings, and the value of open and fair discussion of issues. In this regard So and Yun were more akin to the leaders of Japan's People's Rights Movement than to the K'ang group of China or to the Meiji oligarchs. Even the "outsider" Okuma's ideas do not show the depth of conviction that marked the politi-

---

73) Yi Kwang-nin, *Han'guk kaehwa sasang yon'gu* (Seoul, Korea: Ilchogak, 1979), p. 93.

cal philosophy of So and Yun. When So, for example, described individual rights as "people's birth rights as citizens of this commonwealth," *paeksong ui kwolli* ("people's rights"), *ch'onbu ui kwolli* ("Heaven-endowed rights"), *ch'onsaeng ui kwolli* ("rights pre-ordained by Heaven"), and *hanunimi chusin kwolli* ("rights bestowed by God"), and when he asserted that "the government exists for the people, not the people for the government," and that "the ruler derives his authority from the people," he was reaffirming more than the hoary Mencian populism; he was restating the classic liberal concepts of Rousseau, Locke, and Jefferson.

When taking So's lead Yun extolled dissent as the root of progress, he was introducing J.S. Mill's view on the role of intellectual conflict in clarifying truth. When So spoke of human dignity, he sounded like Spinoza. When he and Yun argued for a representative assembly elected with the help of competing political parties bound by separate political platforms, they were reaffirming the tenets of Edmund Burke. When So wrote about the "greatest happiness of the greatest number" as the standard of sound policy and sound laws, he was echoing not so much Confucian populism as the Benthamite concept of "felicific calculus." When So and Yun argued for transforming the Korean political system from an "absolutist politics" (*chonje chongch'i*) to "constitutional politics" (*iphon chongchi*), they were asking Koreans to help change the Korean monarchy to a more participatory polity, though not immediately but through gradual steps. And they asserted, like Yen Fu, that such a system would make Korea a stronger



nation by creating among the people a better spirit of national solidarity and unity with the state.<sup>74)</sup>

In addition, by showing to his followers how to run the Club and the Debating Society with the help of established parliamentary procedures such as quorum, motion, discussion, amendment, adoption or rejection of a resolution or report by vote and the like, So enabled a sizeable number of Koreans to experience and relish “democracy” rather than merely listen to abstract lectures on it. It was this taste that led the Club to campaign for and gain, albeit temporarily, the royal assent for a partially elected deliberative and legislative assembly with a cabinet-like council of ministers responsible to it.

The emphasis that such democratic rights and popular participation would strengthen state power, though laudable under the prevailing circumstances, did come laden with the potential of rendering individual rights weak, if not precarious, as Benjamin Schwartz argued in his study of Yen Fu, but unencumbered by anything akin to the statism of the Meiji oligarchs, the So-Yun philosophy posed no immediate risk of this kind. And that philosophy also embraced a measure of social egalitarianism. All men, without any class recognition, were to be equal actors on the new political stage. So in particular hammered home this theme through all his forums. Beyond that, the Club included among its members, at least one

---

74) For details on the So-Yun theme of popular sovereignty and popular participation, see Chandra, *Imperialism, Resistance and Reform*, Chapter 8, esp. pp. 174-178.

known representative of the *paekchong*, a pariah group. The *Ch'anyang-hoe*, a somewhat obscure women's association, also was welcomed as an ally of the Club.<sup>75)</sup>

On the question of women's roles, though, So and Yun took a 19<sup>th</sup>-Century Christian rather than a radical modernist stand. Deploring what they called the “degraded” and “barbarous” treatment of Korean women, and encouraging women to elevate their status through modern education, they sought women's emancipation from the traditional Confucian confines. However, they did not suggest the upgrading of women's place beyond that of informed and dignified partners of men in marriage and family. In this they seemed to echo the *ryosai kenbo* (“good wives, wise mothers”) slogan of the Meiji oligarchs but mediated by their own Christian sensibilities. Their writings not even remotely resemble the feminist consciousness of Ch'iu Chin or Yosano Akiko. It could hardly have been otherwise. As in China and Japan, the authentic voices about what it meant for a woman to be part of the modern world could only have come from women themselves. In this regard, the intellectual and social consciousness of Chinese and Japanese women was far ahead of Korean women due to greater opportunities for new female education in China and Japan, even though neither Chinese nor Japanese women yet enjoyed any political rights or meaningful economic rights. Nevertheless, Chinese and Japanese women's own voices did emerge, as we have seen, through books, magazines and newspapers,

---

75) *Ibid.*, Chapters 7-8.

and they persistently sought the power to shape the national agenda of change from their own perspectives. The less developed circumstances of Korean women considerably slowed their progress toward the acquisition of modern means of assertive self-expression.

By the same token, despite the assumption by So and his group of the role of reformists, they showed no recognition of modern socialist ideas of the kind visible in contemporary Japan. One does not find any articulate and specific concern in the ideas of So and his associates for the plight of either the urban poor or the tillers of the soil. There was, to be sure, nothing in Korea that could yet be called modern industrialism that in Japan, for example, gave birth to the modern sweatshops and their horrors. Yet Japanese socialism was a response to both urban distress and rural poverty, and Korea definitely had its pre-industrial urban poverty and squalor as well as rural penury. The reason why So and Yun, in particular, did not feel any socialist stirrings under those conditions must therefore be sought in their Christian faith. They could talk of compassion but could not embrace the weaponry of Marxist questioning. The reformist Confucianists who sometimes joined hands with them could also not develop a truly wide-angled view of reform because of their own limitations. In their concept of change, thus, the So-Yun group remained in part trapped by the same blind-spots that afflicted the K'ang group's top-down vision for China.

In late 1898, So's Independence Club was suppressed by the credulous King Kojong, as is well known, due to false rumors planted by its conservative foes that it was planning to overthrow the monarchy and

establish a republic. Thus a promising stride toward modernity was crushed by the withdrawal of royal support. The national assembly was "dead on arrival." Earlier, So himself had to give up his crusade and to return to the U.S. under pressure from those domestic and foreign elements whose sectarian or personal interests were threatened by his nationalism and progressivism. Yet neither So nor the Club were turned into mere footnotes of history. So continued to speak for Korean causes, and many of his followers in Korea continued to express themselves, both before and after the Japanese annexation, in individual and collective capacities, for the agenda that he had set. Independence, reform and national strength continued to echo through other organizations, newspapers and other forums both at home and abroad.<sup>76)</sup> Thus, the seeds that So had planted could not be eradicated; they could only be suppressed temporarily. They would continually sprout, like those of Chinese and Japanese reformists, for they got nourishment from deep inside the minds of Koreans. No repressive authority could reach those depths. In that ultimate sense, So and his Independence Club carved out a secure place in Korean history among the architects of Korean modernity.

---

76) For details on other organizations that followed the Independence Club see Yi Hyon-jong, "On Political, Journalistic, and Social Organizations in the Days of the Taehan Empire," in *Journal of Social Sciences and Humanities* (Seoul), nos. 28-29 (June and December 1966). Between 1897 and 1900 at least nine new newspapers were founded, clearly inspired by the example set by *The Independent*. See Chandra, *Imperialism, Resistance and Reform*, pp. 109-110.